



## Early Journal Content on JSTOR, Free to Anyone in the World

This article is one of nearly 500,000 scholarly works digitized and made freely available to everyone in the world by JSTOR.

Known as the Early Journal Content, this set of works include research articles, news, letters, and other writings published in more than 200 of the oldest leading academic journals. The works date from the mid-seventeenth to the early twentieth centuries.

We encourage people to read and share the Early Journal Content openly and to tell others that this resource exists. People may post this content online or redistribute in any way for non-commercial purposes.

Read more about Early Journal Content at <http://about.jstor.org/participate-jstor/individuals/early-journal-content>.

JSTOR is a digital library of academic journals, books, and primary source objects. JSTOR helps people discover, use, and build upon a wide range of content through a powerful research and teaching platform, and preserves this content for future generations. JSTOR is part of ITHAKA, a not-for-profit organization that also includes Ithaka S+R and Portico. For more information about JSTOR, please contact [support@jstor.org](mailto:support@jstor.org).

PUBLICATIONS  
OF THE  
MODERN LANGUAGE ASSOCIATION OF AMERICA,  
1901.

---

VOL. XVI, 2.

NEW SERIES, VOL. IX, 2.

---

VIII.—THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN ANGLO-SAXON.

INTRODUCTION.

I.

The twofold nature of the participle is sufficiently attested by the fact that it is universally defined as a verbal adjective. The genesis of this twofold nature has been interestingly discussed by Brugmann (*I. F.*, v, 88 ff.; *Gr. Gr.*<sup>3</sup> §§ 479 f.) and by Delbrück (II, p. 477). Mine is the humbler task of pointing out the various manifestations of this dual nature as exemplified in the appositive use of the participle in Anglo-Saxon; to which is appended a brief survey of the same phenomena in the other Germanic languages. This is by no means an easy task, since the same participle may be dominantly adjectival in one sentence, prevaillingly verbal in another, and equally divided between the two in a third. Of course, too, a participle may be used as a noun; but in such case it ceases to be a participle; hence in this paper no account is taken of the substantivized participle. However, certain adverbial uses of the participle are treated.

The difficulty of our problem is further aggravated by the diversity of meaning attached to the same term by different

grammarians. At the outset, therefore, it is necessary to define the terms used in this monograph. The study is based upon a twofold classification of the participle: (I) According to the nature of the participle; (II) According to the relationship of the participle to its subject (or principal).

According to its nature, a participle is (1) verbal when the assertive force is dominant, and (2) adjectival when the descriptive force is dominant; as a rule, the verbal participle denotes an act in the widest sense, while the adjectival denotes a state. These terms, of course, are relative only, and under different collocations each is equally applicable to the same word. Thus, in the phrase, *the shining sun*, *shining* is adjectival, if not an adjective; while in the sentence, *The sun, shining through the trees, lighted our path*, the participle is verbal. But, despite this relativity, the distinction is of great importance; and it is possible to mark off certain more or less stable groups. The preterite participle, for instance, is more adjectival than the present; as the present participle with an object is more verbal than one without an object. Occasionally, too, a participle is so constantly used adjectivally that it becomes an adjective proper, as in the case of the Latin *sanctus*, the A.-S. *cuð*, etc. The completely adjectivized participle is not treated in this monograph.

According to its relationship to its principal, a participle is (A) independent (or absolute) when its subject is grammatically independent of the rest of the sentence, and (B) dependent (or conjoint) when its subject is not grammatically independent of the rest of the sentence, but is intimately bound up therewith. Examples are:—(A): *Bede*<sup>1</sup> 284. 20: *swa eallum geseondum upp in heofonas gewat* = *Bede*<sup>2</sup> 220. 11: *sic uidentibus cunctis ad alta subduxit* (see my *Abs. Ptc. in A.-S.*, p. 5 ff.);—(B): *Luke* 4. 40: *he syndrygum hys hand onsettende hig gehælde* = *ille singulis manus imponens curabat eos*. The dependent (or conjoint) participle may be subdivided into (1) predicative (or supplementary, cf. Goodwin, *Moods and Tenses*, § 877), when the participle is joined to its

subject by means of a verb ; (2) non-predicative (or assumptive, cf. Sweet, § 44), when not joined to its subject by the instrumentality of a verb. The predicative participle may be subdivided into (a) predicate nominative and (b) predicate accusative ; the non-predicative (or assumptive), into (a) attributive, when the connection between the participle and its principal is so close that the two constitute one indivisible idea, and (b) appositive, when the connection between the participle and its principal is so loose that the two seem to constitute two independent ideas ; or, to use the words of Sweet (§ 90): "When the subordination of an assumptive (attributive) word to its head-word is so slight that the two are almost co-ordinate, the adjunct-word is said to be in apposition to its head-word." A few examples will suffice for illustration :—(1) Predicative (or Supplementary): (a) *Predicate Nominative*: *Elene* 492: *Stephanus wæs stanum worpod*;—*ib.* 486: *ða ðy ðriddan dæg lifgende aras*, etc.;—(b) *Predicate Accusative*: *Luke* 22. 56: *ða hine geseah sum ðinen æt leohte sittende* = *quem cum vidisset ancilla quædam sedentem ad lumen*;—*Bl. Hom.* 218. 7: *ða mette he ðane man forðferedne*, etc.;—(2) Non-predicative (or Assumptive): (a) *Attributive*: *Beow.* 741: *he gefeng hraðe forman siðe slæpendne rinc*;—*ib.* 581: *ða mec sæ oðbær . . . wadu wealendu*;—*ib.* 1245: *ðær on bence wæs . . . yðgesene . . . hringed byrne*;—*ib.* 216: *guman ut scufof . . . wudu bundenne*, etc.;—(b) *Appositive*: *Mat.* 9. 12: *se Hælend cwæð, ðis gehyrende* = *At Jesus audiens, ait*;—*Luke* 1. 74: *ðæt we butan ege of ure feonda handa alyseðe him ðeowian* = *Ut sine timore, de manu . . . liberati, serviamus illi*;—*Mat.* 8. 9: *Soðlice ic eom man under anwealde gesett* = *Nam et ego homo sum sub potestate constitutus*;—*Ælfr. Hom.* 1, 62<sup>a</sup>: *Iohannes beseah to heofonum, ðus cweðende*, etc.

No originality is claimed for the above classification ; for, although I have not found the system as a whole in any treatise, almost every one of the terms is substantially so used in one or more standard works. Nor is the system

looked upon as ideal; it is given merely because it seems a fair working scheme for this monograph. But, while I believe that all my terms are clear as above defined and exemplified, the word appositive demands more extended treatment, since it gives the title to this paper.

## II.

Remoteness from the larger libraries precludes my giving a complete history of the phrase appositive participle; and I must content myself with a brief statement concerning the more important grammatical treatises that have been accessible to me. Fortunately, as a reference to the bibliography will show, I have been able to consult all the most significant monographs (old as well as new) on the participle in Anglo-Saxon and in the other Teutonic tongues.

The phrase appositive participle is not used as a distinct category by Grimm, Becker, Mätzner, Koch, March, Sweet, or Delbrück among the Germanic grammarians, or by Classen, Draeger, Gildersleeve, or Goodwin among the classicists. The locution seems to have been habitually used first<sup>1</sup> by Krüger and Curtius in their Greek grammars, by Madvig in his Latin grammar, by Gabelentz and Löbe in their Gothic grammar, and by Vernaleken in his *Deutsche Syntax*; and its present currency is perhaps largely due to the wide popularity of these works, especially the first three.

By the grammarians who regularly make use of the phrase, two distinct definitions have been given. The one set restricts the term appositive to the participle that is equal to a dependent adverbial (conjunctive) clause, while the other extends it also to the participle that is equivalent to a dependent adjectival (relative) clause. Judged by their definitions, Krüger and Curtius originally sided with the former. Krüger's state-

<sup>1</sup> In his Greek grammar of 1829 (pp. 469, 474), however, Bernhardt has a few words concerning the appositive use of the participle.

ment is as follows (p. 215<sup>1</sup>): "Die appositive Participialconstruction und ihr zur Seite gehend die absolute sind eine unklarere Ausdrucksweise für Sätze die mit dem Hauptsatze in einem temporalen oder realen Verhältnisse stehen." Examples are cited of the appositive participle in (1) temporal, (2) conditional, (3) causal, and (4) concessive clauses, but not in adjectival (relative) clauses, though under the head of temporal uses (p. 217, 10, Anmk. 1) this remark is made: "In vielen Fällen übersetzen wir die Participia durch das Relativ oder durch Conjunctionen." To the same effect is the definition of Curtius (§ 579<sup>2</sup>): "Das Particip dient dazu, einem Substantiv etwas als eine nur vorübergehende Eigenschaft oder Thätigkeit beizulegen. In diesem Falle ist das Particip eine kurze und unbestimmtere Ausdrucksweise für das, was sonst durch Nebensätze mit Conjunctionen der verschiedensten Art ausgedrückt wird." In the following sections (580–583) he gives examples of the appositive participle in (1) temporal, (2) causal and final, (3) concessive, and (4) conditional clauses; adding this note<sup>3</sup>: "Bei dem mannichfaltigen Gebrauch der appositiven Participien ist nicht zu übersehen, dass ein solches Particip an sich keine der in §§ 580–583 entwickelten Bedeutungen deutlich ausdrückt, dass wir vielmehr nur zur Übersetzung uns der einen oder der andern Wendung bedienen, um dasselbe in schärferer Weise auszusprechen, was durch das Particip nur angedeutet

<sup>1</sup> I quote from the fifth edition of his *Attische Syntax* (Leipzig, 1873), but the same statement, I have been informed, occurs in the first edition (Leipzig, 1843).

<sup>2</sup> I quote from the ninth edition (Prag, 1870), but substantially the same statement is made in the first edition (Prag, 1852). And in the chapter on the Participle in his *Erläuterungen*<sup>3</sup> (p. 203) Curtius thus acknowledges his indebtedness to Krüger: "In der Gliederung dieser Gebrauchsweisen bin ich wesentlich K. W. Krüger gefolgt, ohne jedoch in der Reihenfolge mich ihm anzuschliessen."—My quotation is from the third edition of the *Erläuterungen* (1875), but it does not differ essentially from the statement of the first edition (1863).

<sup>3</sup> This note is not in the first edition of the grammar.

ist." Gering specifically restricts the appositive participle to adverbial clauses (p. 393): "Während das attributive particip bestimmend und erklärend zu dem nomén tritt, dient das appositive dazu, gewisse adverbialle nebenbestimmungen der handlung auszudrücken. Es bezeichnet daher, in welcher zeit, aus welchem grunde, in welcher absicht, unter welchen bedingungen oder einschränkungen, durch welche mittel, auf welche art und weise eine person oder ein gegenstand etwas ausführte oder erlitt. Characteristisch für das appositive particip ist es, dass es nie den artikel bei sich hat." The same restriction is made by Karl Köhler and by Kühn, though the latter does not use the term appositive, but speaks of the use of the participle "in eigentlicher participialer Funktion in Vertretung eines Adverbialsatzes."

But, despite the high standing of Krüger, Curtius, and Gering, the restriction of the appositive participle to adverbial uses seems unwise. Indeed, it may be doubted whether Curtius intended so to limit the term by the definition above quoted; if so, he afterwards changed his mind, for in his *Erläuterungen*<sup>3</sup> (p. 203) he gives a definition of the appositive participle that includes its use in adjectival (relative) as well as in adverbial (conjunctive) clauses: "Der 'appositive Gebrauch' schliesst sich an die § 361, 12 gegebene Definition der Apposition an. Wie ich unter Apposition einer Zusatz loserer Art verstehe, welcher in der Regel synonym mit einem beschreibenden Zwischen—oder Nebensatz ist, so entsprechen die appositiven Participien als kürzere, losere und deshalb auch weniger bestimmte Ausdrucksweisen wesentlich demselben Zwecke, der in festerer Weise durch *relative*<sup>1</sup> und Conjunctionssätze erreicht wird." The remainder of his comment, though not on this point, is too instructive to omit: "Classen in seinen oben (S. 173) erwähnten Beobachtungen über den homerischen Sprachgebrauch nennt den von mir appositiv genannten Gebrauch

<sup>1</sup> The italics are mine.

prädicativ. Ich verkenne nicht, dass sich auch diese Bezeichnung rechtfertigen lässt, insofern als das appositive Particip, unterschieden vom attributiven, allerdings eine aussagende, prädicirende Kraft besitzt, die am entschiedensten in den absoluten Participialconstructionen hervortritt. Allein es scheint mir doch gerathener, den Ausdruck prädicatives Particip mit Krüger auf denjenigen Gebrauch zu beschränken, bei welchem das Particip zur Ergänzung eines verbalen Prädicats dient (§ 589 bis 594) und als solches einen wesentlichen Theil der Aussage bildet." Vernaleken leaves no doubt as to his position (p. 502): "Das particip welches dazu dient einem substantiv etwas als eine nur vorübergehende eigenschaft oder thätigkeit beizulegen, also appositionell steht, und so eine kürzere ausdrucksweise ist für das, was sonst durch nebensätze mit bindewörtern oder dem relativ ausgedrückt wird, findet sich," etc.; which definition clearly includes adjective (relative) as well as adverbial (conjunctive) clauses. With this O. Erdmann substantially agrees; for, while he does not use the phrase appositive participle, it is clear that his *selbständiges Participium* of the following quotation corresponds to Vernaleken's appositive participle (*Syntax d. Spr. Otfrids*, p. 214): "Die verbale Natur des Participiums tritt nicht immer in gleichem Masse hervor. Ich suche bei einem jeden der beiden Participia, welche die ahd. Sprache besitzt, die Belege mit Rücksicht hierauf zu ordnen, und unterscheide drei Abschnitte, je nachdem das Participium eine selbständige, von der Handlung des Hauptsatzes unterschiedene Tätigkeit aussagt, oder prädicativ mit dem Verbum zu dem Begriffe einer einzigen Tätigkeit verschmilzt, oder endlich attributiv wie ein Adj. gebraucht wird um eine dem Gegenstande, auf welchen es sich bezieht, stetig inwohnende Eigenschaft zu bezeichnen." In his examples Erdmann cites participles that represent adjectival as well as adverbial clauses; as does Mourek, who (p. 33) speaks of the participle "in selbständiger, prädicativer, satzvertretender apposition." With the exception of K. Köhler and of Kühn, who, as already stated,



restrict the appositive participle to adverbial clauses, all<sup>1</sup> the writers on Old English Syntax named in the bibliography include under the appositive use of the participle adjectival as well as adverbial clauses. Some (Conradi, Einkenel, Flamme, Höser, Kempf, Mohrbutter, Schürmann, Wülfig<sup>2</sup>) use the phrase appositive participle; others (Furkert, Hertel, Planer, Reussner, Seyfarth, Spaeth, Wohlfahrt) speak of the "eigentliches Participium zur Abkürzung eines Satzes" (Wohlfahrt, p. 39); and others (Koch, Mätzner, March, Sweet) have no specific designation for the construction.

Another apparently divergent interpretation calls for brief mention. The standard New High German grammars of Brandt, von Jagemann, Thomas, and Whitney regularly use the expression appositive participle to indicate, in the words of Thomas, "an appositional predicate, which denotes a concomitant act or state;" but "such a participle or participial phrase is," according to Whitney<sup>6</sup> (§ 357), "used only in the sense of an adjective clause, and expresses ordinarily an accompanying circumstance, or describes a state or condition; it may not be used, as in English, to signify a determining cause, or otherwise adverbially." But, as a following note by Whitney and some examples cited by Thomas show, this statement is somewhat too strong, for in New High German an appositive participle is occasionally used in place of a dependent adverbial clause. Moreover, in making the above remark, Whitney intended to acquaint his reader with New High German usage and not to give a general definition of a grammatical term.

To sum up the matter: by a number of eminent grammarians the phrase appositive participle is not used as a distinct category; by others equally eminent it is habitually used, but in different senses. Of the latter some restrict

<sup>1</sup> Except the older grammarians (Hickes, Lye, and Manning), who do not treat the construction of the appositive participle.

<sup>2</sup> Wülfig's treatment of the Appositive Participle has not appeared as yet.

the appositive use to the participle that is equivalent to an adverbial clause, while others make it include adjectival as well as adverbial clauses. The latter usage, though not universal, is becoming general, especially with students of Germanic grammar.

To me the general introduction of this term into our textbooks seems highly desirable, since it would extend to the use of the participle what the student had already learned with reference to the noun. As the statistics show, I include under appositive the participle that is equivalent to an adjectival clause as well as that which is equal to an adverbial clause. The uses of the adverbial appositive participle correspond closely to those of the subordinate adverbial clause, but are so varied as to call for treatment in a separate chapter (II.).

### III.

The appositive use of the participle is common to the Indo-Germanic languages, but by no means equally common. Greek leads the others, and Latin is far in advance of the Germanic languages. An instructive general treatment of the subject is given by Jolly in his *Zur Lehre vom Particip* and by Delbrück in his *Syntax*. To the works named by Delbrück I may add those of Bolling, Fay, Helm, Köberlin, Milroy, and Tammelin, which throw no little light on the appositive participle in Latin and in Greek. Of works on the appositive participle in the Germanic languages exclusive of English a brief account is given in Chapter v.

In the article just referred to, Jolly maintains that the attributive use of the participle preceded the appositive, and that the appositive preceded the predicative, which latter he considers a younger variation of the appositive. In Anglo-Saxon it is probable, I think, that the attributive use preceded the appositive, the latter growing out of the former when thrust into post-position, either because the noun had several participles modifying it at once or because the participle was itself

modified (see section IV., below). The appositive use of the adjectival participle may have preceded the predicative use of the participle; for the appositive adjectival participle is common in Anglo-Saxon poetry, while, as Pessels (p. 49) has shown, the predicative participle of the progressive tenses is very rare in Anglo-Saxon poetry, though common in the prose. But the appositive use of the verbal participle, at least of the participle governing a direct object, is most probably of later development in English than the predicative use of the present participle; since the progressive tenses are very common in the works of Alfred (nearly 600 exs., according to Pessels, p. 51), while the appositive participle with a direct object is practically unknown to him (only 18 exs., of which 17 are in direct translation of a Latin appositive participle), and does not become frequent until the time of Ælfric (see Statistics). But we must turn from these speculative questions to matters about which a reasonable degree of certainty is possible.

#### IV.

In Anglo-Saxon the appositive participle occurs by far most frequently in the nominative case, as is true also in Lithuanian (Delbrück, p. 490) and in Old High German (Mourek). For the representation of the several cases in Anglo-Saxon see the statistics.

The inflexion of the appositive participle is as follows:—

(1) Present:—The nominative singular of all genders has *-ende*, with these exceptions: *-end* occurs three times in the masculine (*Boeth.* 8. 5, *Ælfr. L.* 8. 282. 5, *Ælfr. Hept. (Judges)* 4. 22), and once in the feminine (*Bede*<sup>1</sup> 72. 3); by confusion of inflected infinitive with participle, *Benet* has *-enne* for *-ende* four times (95. 11, 114. 10, 61. 7, all masc.; 98. 6, fem.), *-an* for *-and* once (29. 11, masc.), and *-endre* for *-ende* once (16. 9); *Boeth.*<sup>1</sup> 73. 22 has *-inde*, m. The GSMN. has

*-endes* except once, in *Benet* (109. 2: *secgende*). The GSF. is *-endre* except once, in Ælfric (*L. S.* xxiii. B. 426: *ðencende*). The DSMN. is usually *-endum* (20 exs.), but is *-ende* occasionally (7 exs.: 1 in Ælfred, 1 in *Benedict*, 5 in Ælfric), and *-endan*, weak, once (*Luke* 6. 49). The DSF. is *-endre* normally (4 exs.), rarely *-ende* (1 ex.: Ælfric). The ASM. is *-endne* 21 times,<sup>1</sup> but *-ende* 28 times (Ælfred 3, Ælfric 8, *A.-S. Hom. & L. S.* 5, *Gospels* 6, *Poems* 6). The ASF. is invariably *-ende*. The ASN. is *-ende* except once (*Chron.* 656 E: *cwæðend*). The N. and APMFN. is *-ende* except twice in *Benet* (21. 7: *becumene* for *becumende*, apm.; 26. 14: *stirienda*, apn.). The GP. is *-endra* (14 exs.) except twice in *Benet* (69. 1: *etenda*, 78. 12: *utgangelndre*). The DP. is *-endum* (30 exs.) except twice (*Ælfr. de v. et n. Test* 5. 34: *farende*; *A.-S. Hom. & L. of S.* i, 7. 151: *ib.*).

(2) Preterite:—The NSMN. is *-ed* (*-od*,<sup>2</sup> *-ad*<sup>2</sup>; *-t*,<sup>2</sup>) for weak and *-en* for strong verbs. The NSF. is regularly uninflected (64 exs.), being *-ed* for strong and *-en* for weak verbs; except twice in Ælfric (*Hom.* ii, 90<sup>a</sup>: *fortredene*, weak; *L. S.* xxiii. B. 524: *gedrefedu*). The GSMN. is once *-es* (*Chron.* 1100 E) and once *-ed* (*Christ* 20: *forwyrned*). The GSF. is *-re* (2 exs.). The DSMN. is sometimes inflected (*-um* (*-an*): 11 exs.: EWS. 7, *Gosp.* 1, *Benet* 1, *Poems* 2), but is oftener not inflected (21 exs.: Ælfric 17, *A.-S. Hom. & L. S.* 2, *Poems* 2). The DSF. is occasionally inflected (*-re*: 4 exs.: Ælfred 1, Ælfric 2, *Gosp.* 1), but usually not (14 exs.: *Bl. Hom.* 1, Ælfric 12, *A.-S. Hom. & L. S.* 1). The ASM. is sometimes inflected (*-ne*: 47 exs.: Ælfred 10, Ælfric 17, *Gosp.* 11, *Poems* 8, *Benet* 1), sometimes not (33 exs.: Ælfred 1, Ælfric 28, *Poems* 4). The ASF. is half the time inflected (*-e*: 18 exs.: Ælfred 3, Ælfric 2, *A.-S. Hom. & L. S.* 1, *Gosp.* 1, *Wulfst.* 1, *Poems* 10), the other half not (17 exs.: Ælfred 1, Ælfric 6, *A.-S. Hom. & L. S.* 1, *Wulfst.* 3,

<sup>1</sup> In one of these (*Benet* 107. 7) the text has *-enne* for *-endne*.

<sup>2</sup> These regular variants of *-ed-* will not be specified hereafter.

*Benet* 2, Poems 4). The ASN. is uninflected except in *Bede* 314. 14 (*getrymede*, but MS. Ca.: *getrymed*). The N. and APM. is habitually inflected (-e: over 200 exs., in all the texts), but occasionally not (15 exs.: E. W. S. 4, *A.-S. Hom. & L. S.* 1, *Benet* 1, Poems 9). The N. and APF. is invariably inflected (-e 29 exs.; -u 1 ex.: *Benet* 92. 15, but see note thereon in statistics). The N. and APN. is usually inflected (-e: 24 exs.; -an, weak, 1 ex.: *Bede*<sup>1</sup> 182. 23), but is uninflected at times (13 exs.: *Ælfred* 2, *Bened.* 1, Poems 10). The GP. is inflected regularly (-ra: 13 exs.) except once in the *Chron.* (656 E: *læred*). The DP. is inflected four times (-um), and is uninflected three times (*Ælfred* 1, *Ælfric* 2).

It is evident, therefore, that in Anglo-Saxon, especially in Late West Saxon and in the poems, the appositive participle is often not inflected, much oftener indeed than is stated in Sievers's *Angelsächsische Grammatik*.<sup>3</sup> The same is true of Old High German (Mourek, p. 19; O. Erdmann, *Syntax d. Spr. Olfrids*, § 355) and of Old Saxon (Pratje, § 156), but not of Gothic (Gering, p. 393).

Again, the inflexion of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon is almost invariably strong. In this sentence from the *Blickling Homilies* (107. 20: *Ða eaðmodan heortan and ða forhtgendan and ða bifigendan and ða cwacigendan and ða ondrædendan heora Scyppend, ne forhogað ða næfre God ne ne forsyhð*), the weak participle, *ondrædendan*, has an object, and is partly attributive and partly appositive. The sentence illustrates well, I think, the passage of the attributive into the appositive use of the participle; the participle is thrust into post-position because its principal has several participial modifiers, and because the participle itself has a direct object (see section III., above). Sometimes, even in pre-position, the weak participle is strongly appositive, as in *Luke* 6. 49: *He is gelic ðam timbriendan men his hus ofer ða eorðan* = *similis est homini aedificanti domum super terram*;—*Bede*<sup>1</sup> 182. 23: *wæs geworden ðætte ðære seolfan neahte ða brohton* (MS. B.:

*gebrohtan*) *ban ute awunedon* = 148. 17 : *factum est ut . . . . reliquiae adlatae foris permanerent* ; *ib.* 24. 22 ; *Ælfr. Hom.* II., 90<sup>a2</sup> ; *Ælfr. L. S.* XXVII. 117. Compare, too, *Bede*<sup>1</sup> 130. 33 : *ðæt he sceolde his freond ðone betstan in neede gesetum* (MS. B. : *gesettan*) *in gold bebyegan* = 110. 9 : *amicum suum optimum in necessitate positum auro uendere*. Mourek (p. 46) cites three examples of the appositive participle with weak inflection in Tatian.

In Anglo-Saxon the appositive participle regularly follows its principal (post-position), though occasionally it precedes (pre-position : about 100 exs. in all, of which 8 occur in the Poems). Typical illustrations are : *Matthew* 8. 25 : *hy awehton hyne, ðus cweðende* = *suscitaverunt eum, dicentes* ; *Beowulf* 1819 : *we sæliðend seggan wyllað, feorran cumene* ; *Beow.* 721 : *Com . . . rinc siððian dreamum bedæled* ; — *Math.* 2. 11 : *gangende into ðam huse, hi gemetton ðæt cild mid Marian* = *intrantes domum invenerunt puerum* ; *Beow.* 1581 : *slæpende fræt folces Denigea fyftyne men*. It should be added that it is particularly difficult to distinguish between the post-positive attributive and the appositive participle ; but what Mourek (p. 44) says of Tatian seems to me true of Anglo-Saxon in general : most post-positive participles are appositive rather than attributive.

---

## CHAPTER I.

STATISTICS OF THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE  
IN ANGLO-SAXON.*Explanatory Note.*

With the exception of the glosses and of a few out-of-prints, I have made a statistical reading of the whole of Anglo-Saxon literature and of the more definitely known Latin originals of the prose texts. For a detailed statement, see the bibliography.

Within the respective groups the works are arranged approximately in their chronological order, except the Minor Poems, which are given in their alphabetic order.

For the light that it throws upon Anglo-Saxon and Germanic syntax, the participle with an object is everywhere separated from the participle without an object. Obviously the distinction is of less importance for the preterite than for the present participle. As applied to the present participle, the term *object* has its usual signification; as applied to the preterite participle, it includes not only the object in the ordinary acceptation, but also any noun modifier of the participle.

To show the inflection of the participle, each case, number, and gender is cited separately. The abbreviations used to designate these are self-explanatory, as nsn. = nominative, singular, neuter, etc. Cases not cited do not occur. "Other examples" are throughout cited in the alphabetic order of the Anglo-Saxon participles. Compound participles are not separated from the simple ones.

For convenience I have not distinguished  $\delta$  and  $\beta$ , but have uniformly used  $\delta$ .

In all of the more definitely known translations the Latin original is given.

I have carefully compared my own statistics with those given in the monographs upon Anglo-Saxon syntax named in the bibliography; and but for the divergent views, already discussed, as to what constitutes an appositive participle, I should give in detail the results of my several collations. However, if the definition given in each treatise is observed, the difference is not great; hence I shall call attention to only the more noteworthy discrepancies disclosed by my collations.

I have tried to make the statistics complete according to the definition given in my Introduction. But, in such a mass of details, occasional omissions and misclassifications are inevitable; I can only hope that they will not prove so numerous or serious as to invalidate this history of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon.

Finally, I trust that these statistics, which at first doubtless appear unnecessarily detailed, may throw some light on several problems not germane to the purpose of this monograph, such as the contested authorship of the Alfredian works; the Anglo-Saxon vocabulary; the relationship of Anglo-Saxon to Latin syntax aside from the use of the participle, etc.;—some of which I hope to take up at another time.

## I. IN THE PROSE WORKS.

### BEDE<sup>1</sup> (180).

#### A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (107).

##### I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (93).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (58):—

NSM. (23):—22. 34: Ðæt sum on N. mægðe of deaðe *arise*nde . . . secgende wæs = 303. 24: Ut quidam . . . a



mortuis *resurgens* . . . narraverit; 102. 21 is sægd ðæt he *beotigende* forecwæde = 83. 27: fertur *minitans* praedixisse.—Other examples:—8. 19: *becumende* = 36. 4: *perueniens*; 24. 3: *ib.* = 311. 1: *ueniens*; 270. 4: *beotiende* = 211. 10: *minitans*; 22. 29; *bodiende* = 298. 27: *praedicans*; 12. 11: *cumende* = 97. 4: *ueniens*; 8. 16: *ib.* = 33. 21: *navigans*; 8. 28: *ib.* = 39. 29: *reuersus*; 114. 21: *fleonde* = 92. 24: *fugiens*; 190. 18: *forhtigende* = 153. 1: *tremens*; 62. 13: *gefeonde* = 47. 22: *credens*; 442. 26: *gnorniende* = 314. 14: *merens*; 154. 3: *grimsigende* = 128. 6: *saeuiens*; 204. 17: *onhleoniente* = 160. 24: *incumbens*; *sorgende* = *sollicitus*, 186. 23 = 150. 29, 268. 7 = 210. 9; *sweltende* = *moriens*, 18. 18 = 220. 21 (or attrib. in A.-S.?) and 286. 6 = 221. 3; *ib.* = *moriturus*, 24. 5 = 313. 26; 410. 27: *swigende* = 297. 23: *tacitus*; 86. 22<sup>a</sup>: *wæccende* = 60. 28: *sciens*; 86. 22<sup>b</sup>: (no)weotende = 61. 1: *nesciens* (I insert *no* from MSS. Ca. and O.).

NSF. (3):—332. 2: ðreo & ðrittig ðæm ærestum heo æðelice gefylde in weoruldhade *drohtiende* = 252. 23: XXXIII primos in saeculari habitu nobilissime *conuersata* compleuit.—Other examples: 186. 31: *ondrædende* = 151. 10: *timens*; 18. 20: *utgangende* = 220. 22: *egressura*.

NSN. (1):—86. 10: mid ðy ðæt mood ðis ne weotende aræfneð = 60. 7: quia hanc animum *nescientem* pertulisse.

NSM. or F. (2):—240. 26: wol . . . *grimsigende* = 192. 4: *desaeuiens*; 264. 25: *ingongende* = 208. 25: *egressa* (the two preceding nouns are ða *stefn* and ðone *sang*. Of *ingressa* the subject is *vox*).

NPM. (8):—252. 2<sup>a</sup> & <sup>b</sup>: se b. and heora lareowas *gefeonde* and *blissigende* ham hwurfon = 200. 7: sacerdotes, doctor-  
esque . . . rediere *laetantes*.—Other examples:—310. 1: *feoh-  
tende* = 238. 19: *compugnantes*; 284. 15: *forhtiende* = 220. 5: *tremefactae*; 312. 2: *ondettende* = 239. 24: *professi*;

<sup>1</sup> In this text the superior letters distinguish different examples in the same line.

54. 4: *sarigende* = 32. 33: *dolentes*; 438. 30: *sittende* = 312. 11: *residens*; 186. 9: *sorgiende* = 150. 13: *solliciti*.

NPN (1):—158. 27: *ðider gifeonde coman* . . . folc Godes word to gehyranne = 132. 20: *confluebant ad audiendum verbum populi gaudentes* (or pred.?).

NDM. (2):—430. 27: *hwerfende* = 308. 7: *reuersi*; 424. 20: *suigiende* = 304. 30: *tacentes*.

GPN. (1):—104. 18: *seo is monigra folca ceapstow of londe and of sæ cumendra* = 85. 11: . . . *populorum terra marique uenientium*.

DSM. (3):—316. 18: *swa swa me seolfum frinendum* . . . W. *sægde* = 343. 12: *sicut mihimet sciscitanti* . . . W. *referebat*.—Other examples: 382. 22: *biddendum* = 280. 12: *roganti* (or attrib.?): 330. 14: *taltriendum* = 251. 34: *periclitanti*.

DSF. (1):—288. 34: *swa swa heo to hire lifigendre spræce, bæd ðæt*, etc. = 223. 5: *quasi uiuentem adlocuta, rogavit*.

DPM. (4):—382. 17: *ðæt hie mihton heora biddendum freondum syllan* = 280. 6: *quam rogantibus amicis dare* . . . *possent* (or attrib.?).—Other examples:—366. 21: *cumendum* = 271. 29: *aduenientibus*; 8. 2: *gelyfendum* = 28. 15: *credentes*; 336. 25: *wuniendum* = 255. 28: *manentibus*.

ASM. (3):—228. 19: *he eorre ðone cyning liggende gehran mid ðære gyrde* = 174. 6: *Iratus autem tetigit Regem iacentem*.—Other examples:—312. 27<sup>b</sup>: *forðleorendne* = 240. 22: *procedentem*; 270. 22: *lifigende* (MS. Ca.: *lifigendne*) = 211. 30: *in carne manentem*.

ASN. (2):—140. 12: *he noht elles dyde* . . . *ðon ðæt cumende Cristes folc ðider of eallum tunum* . . . *mid godcundre lare timbrede* = 115. 4: *nil aliud ageret quam confluentem eo* . . . *plebem C.* . . . *verbo instruere*; 412. 13: *licgende* = 298. 9: *iacentem*.

APM. (2):—276. 12: *licade us efencuman æfter ðeawe arwyrðra rehta smeagende bi ðæm*, etc. = 215. 1: *placuit conuenire nos*, . . . *tractaturos de*, etc.; 10. 29: *hwylc wracu hi forhogiende æfterfyligde* = 81. 8: *quaeue illos spernentes*

ultio secuta est. [Miller and Smith have *him forhogiende*, in which case *forhogiende* would be a "crude" dative plural; but it seems preferable to read *hi forhogiende*, the variant given by Miller and Schipper, which corresponds better with the Latin. Though Miller apparently so translates, *him* could scarcely be the object of *forhogiende*, since according to Wülfing (p. 186) this verb governs the accusative only.]

APF. (2):—426. 33<sup>a&b</sup>: *ða geseah ic mænigo ðara wergra gasta v. monna sawla grornende & heofende teon & lædan on* = 306. 13<sup>a&b</sup>: *considero turbam malignorum spirituum, quae quinque animas hominum merentes heulantesque . . . trahebat.*

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which finite verb is usually in immediate connection with an appositive participle (5):—

NSM. (3):—160. 15: *he ða gifeonde ðearfum rehte and sealde* = 135. 28: *Cuncta . . . mox hauperibus . . . erogare gaudebat* (cf. *gefeonde* = *gaudentes* in 158. 27 = 132. 20, etc.).—Other examples:—88. 17<sup>a&b</sup>: *goiende ȝ geomriende cwæð* = 61. 25: *gemebat dicens.*

NPM. (2):—250. 28: *and Cristes noman . . . gefeonde* [MS. B.: *lustlice*] *andettan* = 200. 5: *ac nomen C . . . confiteri gauderent*; 240. 13: *Drihtne gefeonde ðeowodon* = 180. 25: *Christo . . . seruire gaudebant.*

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerund in the ablative (20):—

NSM. (16):—22. 17<sup>a&b</sup>: *Ðæt he his preosta ænne . . . gebiddende ȝ blotsigende fram deaðe gecyrde* = 289. 4<sup>c&d</sup>: *orando ac benedicendo a morte reuocauerit.*—Other examples:—348. 25: *bebeodende* = 262. 18: *commendando*; 270. 34: *dwoliende* = 212. 11: *errando*; 346. 3: *eodorcende* = 260. 31: *ruminando*; 246. 25<sup>b</sup>: *gongende* = 195. 21<sup>b</sup>: *incedendo*; *gebiddende* = *orando*, 8. 23<sup>b</sup> = 37. 5, 12. 10 = 93. 26, 16. 2 = 158. 27, 20. 29 = 271. 3, 22. 7<sup>b</sup> = 281. 2, 22. 11 = 285. 1, 22. 14 = 288. 1; *ib.* = *benedicendo*, 22. 9

= 282. 30; 246. 25<sup>a</sup>: *ridende* = 195. 21<sup>a</sup>: *equitando*; 348. 24: *segniente* = 262. 17: *signando*.

NSF. (2):—72. 3<sup>a&b</sup>: ðætte oft [*cirice* is to be supplied from earlier part of sentence] ðæt wiðerworde yfel *abeorende* and *ældend* (MS. O.: *yldende*) bewereð = 51. 29, 30: ut saepe malum quod aduersatur *portando* et *dissimulando* conpescat.

NPM. (1):—72. 9: ða ðe him ne ondrædað *weotonde* syngian = 52. 1: qui non metuunt *sciendo* peccare.

ASM. (1):—22. 16<sup>a</sup>: Ðæt he his preosta ænne of horse *fallende* & gebrysedne gelice gebiddende & bletsigende fram deaðe gecyrde = 289. 4<sup>a</sup>: Ut clericum suum *cadendo* contritum, aequè orando ac benedicendo a morte reuocauerit.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (2):—

NSM. (1):—204. 3: he . . . on ðære styðe *stondende* forðferde = 160. 5: . . . *adclinis* destinae . . . spiritum, uitae exhalaret ultimum.

NPM. (1):—54. 5: sume *forhtiende* on eðle gebidon = 33. 1: alii perstantes in patria *trepidi* . . . agebant.

5. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (1):—

NSM. (1):—142. 8: sægde he ðæt he hine *cneoht weosende* gesawe = 116. 12: et se *in pueritia* vidisse testabatur. [*hine* here stands for *here*, 'sanctuary.'—Cf. *Bede* 188. 1: in ðam mynstre . . . in ðam *cneohtwesendum* ðis hælo wundor geworden wæs = 151. 15: in eodem monasterio . . . in quo tunc *puero* factum erat hoc miraculum sanitatis, in which *cneohtwesendum* is perhaps a substantive. Cf. further *Widsið* 39; *Beow.* 46, 372, 535, 1187.]

6. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adverb (2):—

NSM. (1):—38. 1: Ða . . . he ealle ða witu . . . geðyldelice and *gefeonde* for Drihtne abær and aræfnðe = 20. 1: Qui . . . patienter hæc pro Domino immo *gaudenter* ferebat. [Perhaps it is better to consider *gefeonde* here as a pure adverb.]

NPM. (1):—310. 30: Ðas we seondon arfæstlice fyligende & rihtwuldriende = 239. 23: Hos itaque sequentes nos pie atque *orthodoxe*. [Pure adverb? Cf. 310. 25: we wæron smeagende rehtne geleafan & *rihtwuldriende* = 239. 17: fidem rectam & *orthodoxam* exposuimus, where *rihtwuldriende* is an adjective.]

7. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin future infinitive (2):—

NPM. (2):—266. 32<sup>a & b</sup>: æfter seofon dagum heo eft *hweorfende* & *cumende* me gehehton; 7 me ðonne mid him lædan woldon = 209. 34: se *redituros*, ac me secum adducturos *esse* promiserunt.

8. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (3):—

NSM. (1):—464. 16: *gefeonde* ða heofonlican rico gestah & gesohte = 330. 1: no Latin correspondent.

NPM. (1):—100. 12: Ða ondetton eac Brettas *scomiende* ðæt heo ongeton = 82. 14: Tum Brettones confitentur quidem intellexisse se.

ASM. (1):—214. 32: ða gegreopon ða unclænan gastas ænne of ðam monnum ðe heo in ðam fyre bærndon and ðræston 7 wurpon swa *beornendne* on hine & he gehran his sculdra 7 his ceacan 7 hine swa forbærndon = 166. 26: arripientes immundi spiritus unum de eis, quos in ignibus torrebant, iactaverunt in eum, et contingentes humerum maxillamque eius incenderunt.

## II. WITH AN OBJECT (14).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (14):—

NSM. (8):—378. 25: he mid ðy mæstan gewinne mid his crycce hine *wreðigende* ham becom [MS. B.: hine gewreðede & ham becom] = 278. 15: maximo cum labore baculo *innitens* domum peruenit. Cf. 380. 7: his leomo mid his crycce *wreðigende* eode in cyrican [MS. B.: gewreðede &

eode] = 278. 27: artus baculo *sustentans* intrauit ecclesiam.—14. 4: Ðæt se ylca cyning *biddende* . . . biscope onfeng Aidanum on naman gehatenne = 131. 4: Ut . . . rex *postulans* antistitem . . . acceperit Aidanum. Cf. 10. 12: andsware *biddende* onfeng = 48. 2: responsa *petens* acceperit.—10. 7: and swa . . . G. word *bodigende* on Cent eode = 44. 25: sic . . . Cantiam *praedicaturus* intrauerit.—352. 14: ðætte . . . ongan, swa he eft for intingan ðære godcundan lufan *lustfulliende* ðam ecum medum fæstlice forðlæste = 264. 12: quod . . . iam causa diuini amoris *delectatus* praemiis indefessus agebat.—450. 20: mid ðy he wæs godre gleaunesse cniht 7 he ða ylde mid ðeawum *oferstigende* [MS. B.: wæs oferstigende] & he swa gemetfæstlice & swa ymbseawiendlice hine sylfne on eallum ðingum beheold ðæt = 322. 27: atque aetatem moribus *transiens*, ita . . . gereret ut (or pred.?).—16. 8: Ðæt se . . . b. *onfonde* . . . sume stowe mynster on to timbrianne, & ða mid halgum gebedum & fæstenum Drihtne gehalgode = 174. 22: Ut idem episcopus locum . . . *accipiens* . . . Domino consecraverit.

NPM. (3):—312. 23<sup>a & b</sup>: we wuldriað usserne D. swa swa ðas wuldredon . . . noht *toætecende* oððe onweg *ateonde* = 240. 18<sup>a & b</sup>: glorificamus D. sicut . . . nihil *addentes* uel *subtrahentes*.—312. 25: ða ðe heo onfengon we eac swelce onfoð . . . *wuldriende* God Fæder, etc. = 240. 20: suscepimus, *glorificantes* Deum, etc.

GSN. (1):—426. 30: gehled & ceahetunge swa swa unge-læredes folces & *biosmriendes* gehæftum heora feondum = 306. 10: cachinum crepitantem quasi uulgi indocti captis hostibus *insultantis*.

APM. (2):—54. 31: sende munecas mid hine Drihten *ondredende* = 42. 21: misit monachos *timentes* Dominum.—358. 10: Ac forðon ðe he ne wolde ðy ærran geare gehyran ðone arwyrðan fæder Ecgberht, ðæt he Sceottas hine noht *sceððende* ne afuhte = 267. 7: sed quoniam noluerat audire E., ne Scottiam nil se *ledentem* impugnaret.

*Note.*—In *Bede*<sup>1</sup> 430. 18 (in ðære ic eac swylce ða swetestan stæfne geherde Godes lof *singendra* = 307. 31 : in qua etiam uocem *cantantium* dulcissimam audiui) we have a substantivized participle with an object.

## B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (73).

### I. WITHOUT OBJECT (60).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (47):—

NSM. (14):—318. 1: ðæt . . . lichoma *bebyrged* brosnian ne meahte = 243. 24: *sepulta* caro corrumpi non potuit.—Other examples:—400. 25: *bewrigen* = 290. 15: *obtectus*; 396. 20: *forðfered* = 288. 9: *defunctus*; 442. 22: *ge-eadmoded* = 314. 10: *humiliatus*; 8. 23<sup>a</sup>: *gehæfd* [MS. B.: wæs gehæfd] = 37. 5: *detentus*; 442. 23: *geniðerad* = 314. 12: *damnatus*;—*geseted* = *positus*, 20. 27 = 268. 20 & 444. 5 = 314. 21; 10. 10: *geworden* = 48. 1: *factus*; 260. 7: *haten* = 205. 28: *iussus*; 278. 18<sup>b</sup>: *ib.* = 216. 16<sup>b</sup>: *invitatus*; 92. 17: *oferswiðed* = 71. 23: *uictus*; 352. 13: *onbryrðed* = 264. 11: *compunctus*; 278. 18<sup>a</sup>: *onfongen* = 216. 16<sup>a</sup>: *susceptus*.

NSF. (4):—330. 30: heo of eorðan *alæded* leorde ðy fiteogeðan dæge = 252. 20: de terris *ablata* transiuit.—Other examples:—340. 16: *afyrhted* = 257. 20: *perterrita*; 470. 25: *geriht* [MS. B.: geriht wæs] = 346. 12: *correcta*; 104. 17: *geseted* = 85. 10: *posita*.

NSN. (1):—78. 15: wiif in blodes flownesse *geseted* = 52. 1: in fluxu *posita*; *ib.* 78. 28 = 56. 5.

NS. M. or N. (1):—150. 13: . . . mæl & cælic . . . gehalgad = 126. 9: calicem . . . *consecratum*.

NS. N. or F. (1):—262. 22: wæl & monewild *gesended* = 207. 21: clades *missa*.

NPM. (7):—164. 7: oððæt heo styccemælum *aafedde* . . . beboda onfon meahte (MS. Ca.: mihten) = 137. 17:

donec paulatim *enutriti* . . . ad capienda . . . praecepta sufficerent.—Other examples:—202. 20: *afyrhte* = 159. 21: *territi*; 160. 26: *bescorene* = 136. 10: *adtonsi*; 234. 1: *forðferde* (MS. Ca.: *forðferende*) = 176. 30: *morientes*; 8. 5: *genedde* = 29. 12: *coacti*; 58. 24: *gewelgade* = 45. 33: *praediti*; 310. 2: *togotene* = 238. 22: *refusi*.

NPN. (2):—140. 3: *wæron eac gefulwade oðer his bearn of A. ðære cwene acende* = 114. 25: *Baptizati sunt alii liberi eius de A. progeniti*.—182. 23: *wæs geworden ðætte ðære seolfan neahte ða brohton* (MS. B.: *gebrohtan*) *ban ute awunedon* = 148. 17: *factum est ut . . . reliquiae adlatae foris permanerent* (may be attrib.).

DSF. (1):—320. 7: *cwomon heo to sumre ceastre gehrorenre noht feor ðonon* = 245. 1: *uenerunt ad ciuitatulam quondam desolatam, non procul inde sitam*.

DSN. (1):—338. 32: *in oðrum mynstre fyrr gesettum* = 257. 2: *in alio longius posito monasterio*.

ASM. (8):—312. 27<sup>a</sup>: *we eac swelce onfoð, wuldriende God Fæder & his Sunu ðone acennedan of Fæder acennedne ær worulde* = 240. 21: . . . *glorificantes Deum & filium eius unigenitum ex Patre generatum*.—Other examples:—288. 12: *bewundenne* = 222. 14: *inuolutum*; 380. 24: *forðferedne* = 279. 14: *defunctum*; 22. 16<sup>b</sup>: *gebrysedne* = 289. 4<sup>b</sup>: *contritum*; 88. 15: *gebundenne* = 61. 23: *ligatum*; 246. 7: *gelæredne* = 194. 28: *instructum*; 94. 14: *genumen* (MS. B.: *genumenne*) = 79. 9: *sumtum*; 130. 33: *gesetum* (MS. B.: *gesettan*) = 110. 9: *positum*.

ASF. (3):—58. 25<sup>a & b</sup>: *Bæron . . . anlicnesse Drihtnes Hælendes on brede afægde and awritene* = 46. 2: *ferentes . . . imaginem . . . in tabula depictam*; 484. 28: *geðyde* = 359. 29: *adiectum*.

ASN. (3):—122. 12: *Hæfde he . . . twiecge handseax geættred* = 99. 3: *qui habebat sicam bicipitem toxicatam*.—Other examples:—106. 7: *gehalgod* = 86. 12: *dedicatum*; 314. 14: *priuilegium of ðære apostolican aldorlicnesse getrymede* (MS. Ca.: *getrymed*) = 241. 14: . . . *epistulam priuilegii*



ex auctoritate apostolica *firmatam* (*getrymede* due to close following of *firmatam*?).

APM. (1):—296. 7: Geseah he . . . ðry wæpnedmen to him cuman mid beorhtum hræglum *gegyrede* = 226. 21: Uidit enim . . . tres ad se uenisse uiros claro *indutos* habitu.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin predicative participle (1):—

NSN. (1):—272. 6: Is ofer his byrgenne stowe treowge-weorc on gelicnesse medmicles huses geworht, mid hrægle *gegyrwed* = 212. 17: Est autem locus idem sepulcri tumba lignea in modum domunculi facta *co-opertus*.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (3):—

NSM. (3):—342. 4<sup>a & b</sup>: In . . . mynstre wæs sum broðor syndriglice mid godcundre gife *gemæred* ⁊ *geweorðad* = 258. 28: In m. fuit frater quidam diuina gratia specialiter *insignis*; 88. 25: *geneded* = 62. 2: *inuitus*.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (1):—

NSM. (1):—16. 15: Ðæt E. se halga wer of Angeleynnes cynne *acenned* munuclif wæs lædende on Hibernia = 191. 26: Ut E., uir sanctus *de natione Anglorum*, monachicam in H. uitam duxerit.

5. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (8):—

NSM. (5):—20. 28: Ðæt se wer on ancerlife *geseted* . . . gelædde = 271. 3: Ut idem in uita anachoretica . . . pro-duxerit. *Ib.*: 22. 7<sup>a</sup> = 281. 2. [Cf. *geseted* = *positus* in 20. 27 = 268. 20, 444. 5 = 314. 21.]—Other examples:—114. 14: *geswenced* & werig [MSS. B. & C.: wæs] = 92. 17; 258. 28: *haten* ('called') = 205. 15; 434. 24: *haten* ('called') = 310. 6.

ASM. (1):—14. 5: Ðæt se ylca cyning biddende . . . biscope (MS. B.: bysceop) onfeng Aidanum on naman *ge-hatenne* = 131. 4: Ut idem rex postulans antistitem . . . acceperit Aidanum. [Cf. 158. 12: him biscope sendon, Aidan

wæs haten = 131. 15: accepit namque pontificem Aedanum.]

APM. (1):—328. 7: ða stafas mid him *awritene* hæfde (or pred.?) = 250. 28: no Latin equivalent. [MS. B. omits *awritene*.]

APN. (1):—108. 17: ða ðing ðe ðær gedemed wæron . . . wrat and fæstnade ond eft hwearf to B. 7 ða mid hine on Ongolcīricum to healdenne *awriten* brohte = 88. 22 (or pred.?).

## II. WITH AN OBJECT (13).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (12):—

NSM. (3):—214. 11: eft *onlysed* ðy lichoman byrneð = 166. 4: ita *solutus* corpore ardebit.—Other examples:—478. 1: eldo *fornumen* = 349. 29: *consumtus* aetate; 440. 20: witum *underðeoded* = 313. 3: pænis *subditus*.

NSF. (1):—332. 16: Forðon ðe . . . Hereswið . . . regollicum ðeodscipum *underðeoded*, baad ðone ecan sige = 253. 10: Nam H. . . regularibus *subdita* disciplinis expectabat.

GSF. (1):—172. 26: Ðisse fæmnan Gode *gehalgodre* monige weorc . . . gewuniað . . . sægd beon = 143. 1: Huius autem uirginis Deo *dicatae* solent, etc.

GPF. (1):—284. 32: in ðara fæmnena mynstre Gode *gehalgodra* = 220. 26: in uirginum Deo *dedicatarum* cella.

DSM. (1):—16. 12: Se cyning for ðam sige *sealdan* him . . . sealde, etc. = 129. 11: pro *adepta* uictoria . . . dederit.

DPF. (1):—14. 15: be E. and A. Gode *gehalgedum* fæmnum = 142. 2: de E. and Æ., *sacratīs* Deo uirginibus.

DPN. (1):—24. 22: mid him ðam *underðeoddum* mynstrum = 346. 14: cum *subiectis* sibi monasteriis (or attrib.?).

ASF. (1):—232. 2: ne ðonne nemne medmicel dæl hlafes and an henne æg mid litle meole wætre *gemengede* he onfeng = 175. 30: cum paruo lacte aqua *mixto* percipiebat.

ASN. (1):—344. 28: ðy betstan leoðe *geglanged* him asong

and ageaf, ðæt him beboden wæs = 260. 24: optimo carmine, quod iubebatur, *compositum* reddidit.

APN. (1):—212. 23: Geseah he eac feower fyr onæled on ðære lyfte noht micle fæce betweoh him *tosceaden* = 165. 20: . . . quatuor ignes . . . non multo . . . spatio *distantes*.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerundive (1):—

NSF. (1):—236. 29: Ða eode seo . . . dohtor . . . Gode *gehalgod* in ðæt mynster = 179. 1: Intrauit filia Deo *dedicanda* monasterium.

### BOETHIUS<sup>1</sup> (27).

#### A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (17).

##### I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (17).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (2):—

NSM. (1):—14. 16: se broc, ðeah he swife of his rihtryne, ðonne<sup>1</sup> ðær micel stan *wealwiende* of ðam heohan munte oninnan fealð & hine todælð & him his rihtrynes wiðstent = 23. 16: Quique uagatur montibus altis defluus amnis, sæpe resistit rupe *soluti* obice saxi.

NSF. (1):—81. 27: Swa ðu gesceope ða saule ðæt hio sceolde ealne weg hwearfian on hire selfre, swa swa eall ðes rodor hwerfð, oððe swa swa hweol onhwerfð, *smeagende* ymb hire sceoppend oððe ymbe hi selfe = 71. 13: Tu triplicis mediam naturae cuncta moventem conectens animam per consona membra resoluis. Quae cum secta duos motum glomeravit in orbes, in semet *reditura* meat mentemque profundam circuit et simili conuertit imagine caelum.

2. The A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which verb is in immediate connection with an appositive participle (1):—

<sup>1</sup> I have expanded the contractions of this text.

NPM. (1):—108. 14: *irnað hidres ðidres dwoligende* under ðæm hrofe eallra gesceafta = 93. 78: *sed circa ipsam rerum summam uerticemque deficiunt* nec in eo miseris contingit effectus quod solum dies noctesque moliantur.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin substantive in the ablative (2):—

NSM. (2):—8. 8<sup>1 & 2</sup>: *wepende & gisciende* = 3. 2: *fletibus*.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds loosely to a Latin substantive in the nominative (1):—

NPM. (1):—74. 31: *dwoliende* = 67. 9: *error* etc.

5. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (2):—

NSM. (2):—8. 15: *geomriende* asungen hæfde = 4. 2: *querimoniam lacrimabilem*; 8. 6: *ic sceal nu heofiende singan* = 3. 1: *flebilis*.

6. The A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (9):—

NSM. (9):—3. 7: Hu B. *hine singende* gebæd; *singende* cwæð: 9. 29, 46. 2, 48. 22, 60. 27, 71. 4, 8. 5 (*singend—*), 73. 22 (*singinde—*); 17. 14: *sorgiende* anforlete.

## II. WITH AN OBJECT (0).

No example.

## B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (10).

### I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (10).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (3):—

GPM. and N. (2):—11. 27, 28<sup>1</sup>: *Ne me na ne lyst mid glase geworhtra* (or attrib.?) *waga ne heahsetla mid golde & mid gimumm gerenodra* = 19. 21: . . . *comptos* ebore ac uitro parietes.

ASN. (1):—133. 22: *God seleð ægðer ge good ge yfel gemenged* = 112. 140: *mixta*.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin absolute participle (1):—

NS. F. or N. (1):—91. 8: wuht . . . ðe *ungened* lyste forweorðan = 78. 45: *nullis cogentibus*.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb (1):—

NSM. (1):—46. 27: se nama mid feaum stafum *awriten* = 47. 17: *signat* nomen literis.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (1):—

NP. F. or N. (1):—100. 22: gesceafta hiora agnum willum *ungenedde* him wæren underðiodde = 83. 47: *uoluntaria* sponte.

5. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (4):—

NSN. (1):—131. 27: *gemenged* = 111. 96 (cf. 133. 22: *gemenged* = 112. 140: *mixta*).

NPM. (2):—30. 25, 26: ðonne sint hi ðe pliolicran & geswincfulran *hæfd* ðonne *næfd*.

GPF. (1):—11. 28: boca mid golde *awritenra* = 19. 21 (an ap. ptc. occurs in the Latin of this sentence, but not corresponding to *awritenra*).

## II. WITH AN OBJECT (0).

No example.

## GREGORY<sup>1</sup> (82).

### A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (58).

#### I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT. (56).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (9):—

NSM. (2):—261. 11: Se ilca *suigende* geðafode swingellan = 196<sup>b1</sup>: *tacitus* flagella toleravit; 225. 22; ðeahtigende = 170<sup>b</sup>: *retractantes*.

<sup>1</sup> In this text *a* refers to the top and *b* to the bottom of the page.

NSN. (1):—431. 18 : Swa bið ðæt mod *slæpende* gewundad swa hit ne gefret, ðonne etc. = 356<sup>a</sup>: Mens quippe a cura suae sollicitudinis *dormiens* verberatur et non dolet, quia etc.

NPM. (3):—405. 31 : Ac ða hie wendon hiera bæc to him, ða hi *ofermodgiende* his gebod forhogdon = 326<sup>a</sup>: *superbiens* ejus jussa contempsit.—Other examples:—259. 19 : *suigende* = 196<sup>a</sup>: *taciti*; 171. 9 : *ðurhwuniende* = 126<sup>a</sup>: *inhaerentes*.

DSM. (2):—93. 9 : Hit is gecueden ðæt se sacerd scolde sweltan, gif se sweg nære of him gehiered ge *innongendum* ge *utgongendum* = 62<sup>b</sup>: Sacerdos namque *ingrediens* vel *egrediens* moritur, se de eo sonitus non auditur.

ASM. (1):—399. 14 : Sio Segor gehælde Loth *fleondne* = 318<sup>a</sup>: Segor civitas, quae *fugientem* salvet infirmum.

Note.—In 159. 18 (ðæt hi ðonne gehieran *ðreagende* of ðæs lariowes muðe hu micle byrðenne hie habbað on hiera scyldum = 116<sup>a</sup>: ut cum culpa ab auctore non cognoscitur, quanti sit ponderis, ab *increpantis* ore sentiatur) *ðreagende*, as Cosijn suggests (vol. 2, p. 97), is doubtless used adverbially. We should expect the genitive, *ðreagendes*, to agree with *lariowes*. Compare the use of *ðreatigende* in 315. 23, etc.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which finite verb either is subordinate or is in immediate connection with an appositive participle that has been turned into an A.-S. finite verb (6):—

NSM. (5):—93. 6 : Hit is awriten ðæt he scolde *inn-gongende* & *utgongende* beforan Gode to ðam halignessum beon gehiered his sueg, ðylæs he swulte = 62<sup>b</sup>: Scriptum quippe est: “Ut audiatur sonitus, *quando ingreditur* et *egreditur* sanctuarium in conspectu Domini, et non moriatur.”—151. 24 : he hit him ðeah *suigende* gesæde = 110<sup>a</sup>: et hoc ipsum tamen, *quia tacuerit*, dixit. [Just before this, however, occurs *tacens* et quasi non videns].—369. 4 : *siofigende* cwæð = 286<sup>a</sup>: *queritur* dicens.—315. 23 : *ðreatigende* cwæð = 244<sup>a</sup>: *redarguit* dicens.

NPM. (1):—215. 7 : *unwillende* = 162<sup>a</sup>: quae non *appetunt*.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerund in the ablative (18):—

NSM. (13):—101. 14: & eft hine selfne ofdune *astig-gende* he cuðe gemetgian his hieremo[n]num = 70<sup>a</sup>: quia noverat eumdem se auditoribus *condescendendo* temperare.—379. 19: ðætte he eac *cigende & lærende* oðre ðider tio & laðige ðider he getogen bið = 294<sup>b</sup>: Ut . . . illuc etiam *clamando* alios quo ipse rapitur trahat.—Other examples:—27. 21: *geðafiende* = 8<sup>a</sup>: *permittendo*; 127. 6: *oliccende* = 88<sup>b</sup>: *demulcendo*; 49. 20 and 81. 10: *sprecende* = 26<sup>b</sup> and 54<sup>a</sup>: *loquendo*; 123. 21: *stirende* = 86<sup>a</sup>: *corrigeno*; 127. 7: *ðreatigende* = 88<sup>b</sup>: *terrendo*; 383. 8: *ib.* = 298<sup>a</sup>: *increpando*; 295. 12 and 297. 15: *wandigende* = 222<sup>b</sup> and 224<sup>b</sup>: *parcendo*; 81. 11: *wyrcende* = 54<sup>a</sup>: *ostendendo*.

NSN. (1):—433. 6: ðæt is ðæt hit [= mod] ða gedonan unðeawas *swincende* gebete, & ða ungedonan foreðoncelice becierre = 358<sup>a</sup>: ut et praesentia *laborando* subjiat, et contra futura certamina *prospiciendo* convalescat.

NPM. (4):—439. 15: ðæt hi ongiten *feallende* ðæt hie ær hiora agnes ðonces ne stodon = 364<sup>b</sup>: et *cadendo* discunt non fuisse proprium quod steterunt.—Other examples:—91. 22: *hlydende* = 62<sup>a</sup>: *clamando*; 345. 22: *ofermodgiende* = 266<sup>b</sup>: *superbiendo*; 101. 21: *upsceawiende* = 70<sup>a</sup>: *contemplando*.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerund in the genitive (1):—

NPM. (1):—191. 4: ðæt hie wel *libben[de]* gode bisene astellen ðæm ðe him underðiedde sien = 142<sup>a</sup>: discant . . . isti quomodo etiam commissis sibi exempla bene *vivendi* exterius praebeant.

5. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (7):—

NSM. (4):—397. 27, 28: Ne cweðo ic no ðæt ðæt ic ær cwæð *bebeodende*, ac *lærende & geðafigende* = 316<sup>a</sup>: Hoc autem dico *secundum indulgentiam non secundum imperium*; 253. 6: *geomriende* = 192<sup>a</sup>: *in dolore*.

NSN. (1):—417. 11: *geðafigende* = 338<sup>b</sup>: *ex deliberatione*.

NPM. (2):—415. 6: Wuton cuman ær his dome *andettende* (or pred.?) = 336<sup>a</sup>: *Praeveniamus faciem Domini in confessione*; 123. 16: *weaxænde* = 286<sup>a</sup>: *ad interitum*.

6. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin substantive in the ablative of manner or of means (6):—

NSM. (4):—415. 18: & he ða hi swa unrote *oleccende* to him geloccode = 336<sup>b</sup>: *tristemque blanditiis delinivit*.—Other examples:—53. 16: *egesien* = 30<sup>a</sup>: *terroribus*; 53. 16: *hiertende* = 30<sup>a</sup>: *favoribus*; 379. 23: *hreowsigende* = 294<sup>b</sup>: *magna voce pœnitentiae*.

NPM. (2):—185. 7: is cynn ðætte we for hira modes hælo *olicende* hi on smyltnesse gebringan mid ure spræce = 138<sup>a</sup>: *dignum est, ut ad salutem mentis quasi dulcedine citharae locutionis nostrae tranquillitate revocetur*; 117. 17: *suigende* = 82<sup>a</sup>: *tacita cogitatione*.

7. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adverb (1):—

NPM. (1):—381. 25: . . . Godes ðegnas, ða ðe *unwandiende* ðara scyldegena gyltas ofslogen = 296<sup>b</sup>: *qui delinquentium scelera incunctanter ferirent* (or pure adverb?).

8. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin infinitive (3):—

NSM. (2):—403. 6: Forðæm se ðe hine selfne maran godes behæt, & ðonne forlæt ða maran god, & went hine to ðæm læssum, ðonne bið hit swutol ðæt he bið *fromlociende* oferswiðed = 322<sup>a</sup>: *Iui igitur fortiori studio intenderat, retro convincitur respicere, si relictis amplioribus bonis adminima retorquetur*.—61. 3: Se læce bið micles to beald & to scomleas ðe gæð æfter oðra monna husum *læcnigende* (or pred.), & hæfð on his agnum nebbe opene wunde unlacnode = 36<sup>a</sup>: *Si ergo adhuc in ejus opere passiones vivunt, qua præsuntione percussus mederi proprat, qui in facie vulnus portat?*

NPM. (1):—297. 4: Sua, ðonne ðonne hatheortan hie mid nane foreðonce nyllað gestillan, ac sua *wedende* folgiað hwam sua sua Assael dyde Æfnere, & næfre nyllað gesuican,



ðonne is micel ðearf etc. = 224<sup>a</sup>: Sed cum iracundi nulla consideratione se mitigant, et quasi Asael persequi et *insanire* non cessant; necesse est etc.

9. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin substantive in the nominative (1):—

NSM. (1):—207. 22: Forðæm he spræc ðas word ðe he wolde ðara scamleasna scylda *tælende* geopenian = 156<sup>a</sup>: ut et illorum culpas *inrepatio* dura detegeret.

10. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (3):—

NSM. (3):—185. 9: æresð mon sceal spreca *asciende*.—  
153. 5: Ac ðonne se lareow *ieldende* secð ðone timan etc.—  
39. 16: *suigende* he cwæð.

## II. WITH AN OBJECT (2).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (1):—

NSM. (1):—99. 4: & ðætte hie [Cotton MS.: he] sua heallra ðinga *wilnigende* ne forsio his niehstan untrume & scyldige = 68<sup>a</sup>: ne aut alta *petens* proximorum infirma despiciat.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerund in the ablative (1):—

NPM. (1):—171. 13: Ðæt is ðonne ðæt mon ða earce bere on ðæm saglum, ðætte ða godan lareowas ða halgan gesomnunge *lærende* ða niwan & ða ungeleaffullan mod mid hire lare gelæde [*sic* !] to ryhtum geleafan = 126<sup>a</sup>: Vectibus quippe arcam portare, est bonis doctoribus sanctam Ecclesiam ad rudes infidelium mentes *praedicando* deducere. [Cotton MS. has *beoð lærende*.]

## B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (24).

### I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (23).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (11):—

NSM. (4):—443. 22: Ac ða he swa *gebreged* on eorðan feoll, & acsode, & cwæð etc. = 370.<sup>b</sup> Nam cum *prostratus*, requireret, dicens.—Other examples:—135. 23: *gehefegad* and *ofersuiðed* = 96<sup>b</sup>: *victam*; 51. 1: *unclænsod* = 26<sup>b</sup>: non *purgatus*.

NPF. (1):—153. 1: Ac monige scylda openlice *witene* beoð to forberanne = 110<sup>a</sup>: Nonnulla autem vel aperte *cognita*, mature toleranda sunt.

NPN. (2):—245. 8: Hwæt getacniað ðonne ða truman ceastra butan hwurfulu mod, *getrymedu* and *ymbtrymedu* mid lytelicre ladunge? = 184<sup>b</sup>: Quid enim per civitates munitas exprimitur, nisi suspectae mentes et fallaci semper defensione *circumdatae*?

DPM. or N. (1):—155. 10: ðonne he ongiæt be sumum ðingum oððe ðeawum utanne *ætiewdum* eall ðæt hie innan ðenceað = 112<sup>a</sup>: qui discussis quibusdam signis exterius *apparentibus* ita corda subditorum penetrat ut etc.

ASM. (2):—383. 32: gif mon on niwne we[a]ll *unadru-godne* & *unastiðodne* micelne hrof & hefigne onsett, ðonne etc. = 300<sup>a</sup>: quod structuris recentibus necdum *solidatis* si tignorum pondus superponitur etc.

ASN. (1):—403. 20: ðæt hi hit huru *tobrocen* gebeten = 322<sup>b</sup>: bona . . . saltem *scissa* resarciant.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (2):—

NPM. (1):—227. 25: ðe . . . gefeohtað & eft innan hira burgum fæste *belocene* ðurh hiera giemelieste hie lætað gebindan = 172<sup>b</sup>: qui victores sunt, sed per negligentiam postmodum *intra urbis claustra* capiuntur.

NPF. (1):—407. 30: forðæm gif hie geðenceað ðara gesælða ðe him *ungeendode* æfter ðæm geswincum becuman sculon = 328<sup>a</sup>: Si enim attendatur felicitas quae *sine transitu* attingitur.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin ablative of manner or of cause (1):—

NPM. (1):—435. 2: gif hi færlecor syngoden *unbeðohte* = 360<sup>a</sup>: si in his sola *præcipitatione* cecidissent.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin dative of cause (1):—

NPM. (1):—109. 23: Hie sculon forðy *ofdræd[de]* . . . liegean astreahte etc. = 76<sup>a</sup>: quia videlicet etc. ex ea debent etiam *formidini* jacere substrati.

5. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adverb (2):—

NPM. (2):—117. 23: . . . sua . . . sua we for monnum orsorglicor *ungewitnode* syngiað = 82<sup>a</sup>: Tanto . . . quanto apud homines *inulte* peccamus.—137. 19: *Ungeniedde*, mid eowrum agenum willan, ge sculon ðencean = 98<sup>b</sup>: *non coacte*, sed spontanee etc. [Or are both pure adverbs?].

6. An A.-S. appositive participle loosely corresponds to a Latin substantive in the nominative (2):—

NPM. (2):—302. 10: *unmidlode* and *aðundene* = 228<sup>b</sup>: *effrenatio* etc.

7. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (2):—

NSM. (2):—227. 21: & he ðonne sua *gebunden* . . . sargað etc. = 172<sup>b</sup>: ut plerumque vir patiens . . . *captivus* erubescat; 317. 12: *ungeðingod* = 244<sup>b</sup>: *repentina* (or pure adverb?).

8. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (2):—

NPM. (1):—105. 1: . . . clænran ðonne hie . . . wæren, mid ðæm tearum ðara gebeda *aðwægen*.

DPF. (1):—343. 8: æhtum *gereafodu[m]*.

## II. WITH AN OBJECT (1).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin substantive in the accusative (1):—

ASM. (1):—197. 20: hit no gedæfenlic nære ðæt hie slogon Gode *gehalgodne* kyning = 148<sup>a</sup>: *fregit eos responsi-*

onibus, quia manum mittere *in Christum* Domini non deberet (or attrib.?).

# OROSIUS<sup>1</sup> (21).

## A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (16).

### I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (14).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (4):—

NSM. (2):—200. 32: he him *wepende* (ðære bene) ge-tygðade, for ðon ðe (he) sceolde *Italiam* forlætan = 201. 30: *flens* reliquit *Italiam*; 240. 9: *wepende* mænde ða unare = 241. 8: *deplorans* injurias.

NSF. (2):—12. 32, 33: & ðonne forð ðonan west *irnende* heo tolið on twa ymb an igland ðe mon hætt Meroen, & ðonan norð *bugende* ut on ðone Wendelsæ = 13. 20, 22: deinde diu ad occasum *profluens*, faciensque insulam nomine Meroen in medio sui: novissime ad septentrionem *inflexus* . . . plana *Ægypti* rigat.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin substantive (2):—

NSM. or N. (2):—166. 17, 18: ægðer ge he(self) *wepende* hamweard for, ge ðæt folc ðæt him ongean com, eall hit him *wepende* hamweard folgade = 167. 8: . . . ad cujus conspectum *plungentium* junguntur agmina.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (2):—

NSM. (2):—294. 11: hiene siððan mid rapum be ðæm sweoran up aheng, gelicost ðæm ðe he hiene self(ne) *unwītende* hæfde awierged = 295. 8: strangulatus, atque ut *voluntariam* sibi conscivisse mortem putaretur, laqueo suspensus est (notice the mistranslation); 40. 18: *fleonde* = 41. 16: *profugum*.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (6):—

NSM. (4):—178. 24: *searigende*; *unwitende*: 248. 14, 250. 12; 140. 7: *witende*.

ASM. (1):—258. 12: *slæpendne*.

APM. (1):—200. 21: *fleonde*.

## II. WITH AN OBJECT (2).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (1):—

NPM. (1):—32. 21: *geforan Roðum ðæt igland, wilniende ðæt hi ælcum gewinne oðflogen hæfdon* = 33. 19: *credentes quod se . . . abstraherent, Rhodum insulam . . . ceperunt*.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (1):—

NSM. (1):—52. 27: *sona ðæs folces ðone mæstan dæl fleonde mid ealle forlædde* [*dæl* seems to be the object of *forlædde* as well as of *fleonde*].

## B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (5).

### I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (5).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (2):—

NPF. (1):—14. 18: *ðæs landes is xliii [sic] ðeoda, wide tosetene for unwæstmbærnesse ðæs londes* = 15. 20: *gentes sunt quadraginta duae, propter terrarum infæcundam diffusionem late oberrantes*.

ASN. (1):—168. 14: *swa he hit him eft ham bebead on anum brede awriten etc.* = 169. 10: . . . *per tabellas scriptas etc.*

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (1):—

DPF. & M. (1):—88. 13: *Æfter ðæm wæs an ger full ðæt ofer eall Romana rice seo eorðe wæs cwaciende & berstende & ælce dæge mon com unarimedlice oft to (ðæm) senatum, &*

him sædon from burgum & from tunum on eorðan *besuncen* = 89. 10: Per totum fere annum tam crebri, tamque etiam graves in Italia terrae-motus fuerunt, ut *de innumeris quassationibus ac ruinis* villarum oppidorumque assiduis Roma nuntiis fatigaretur.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (2):—

NPM. (2):—92. 30: *bewopene*; 250. 14: *ungeniedde*.

## II. WITH AN OBJECT (0).

No example.

## PSALMS, THORPE (24).

### A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (20).

#### I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (7).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (1):—

NSM. (1):—17. 3: *herigende* ic clypige to ðe, Drihten = *laudans* invocabo Dominum.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (1):—

NSM. (1):—50 Int. (= Introduction): *hreowsiende* = Bruce 93: *Sub occasione pœnitentiae*.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerund in the genitive (2):—

NSM. (2):—34 Int.<sup>1&2</sup>: ma *witgiende*, ðonne wyrgende oððe *wilniende* = Bruce 86: non malevolentia *optandi*, sed praescientia *prophetandi*.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin substantive in the ablative (1):—

NSM. (1):—34 Int.<sup>3</sup>: *wyrgende* = Bruce 86: *malevolentia*.

5. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (2):—

NSM. (2):—30 Int.: *gebiddende* to; 5. 7: *hopiende* to.

## II. WITH AN OBJECT (13).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin absolute clause (1):—

NSM. (1):—38 Int.:—*seofigende* = Bruce 87: *Argentibus . . . mœroribus*.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adverbial phrase (1):—

NSM. (1):—34 Int.: *siofigende* = Bruce 85: *Occasione ærumnarum suarum*.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin equivalent (11):—

NSM. (11):—37 Int.: *andettende*; 28 Int.: *bebeodende*; 33 Int.: *gehatende*; 39 Int.: *gylpende*; 32 Int.: *herigende* (cf. 17. 3, where *herigende* = *laudans*); 47 Int.: *mycliende*; 37 Int.: *seofigende*, *ib.* 43 Int.; 32 Int.: *ðanciende*, *ib.* 45 Int.; 31 Int.: *wundriende*.

## B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (4).

## I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (4).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (2):—

APF. (2):—44. 15: *beslepte* and *gegyrede* = *circumamicta*.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (1):—

ASN. (1):—20. 3: *astæned* = *de lapide*.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (1):—

DSN. (1):—41 Int.: *folce gehæftum* etc. = Bruce 89: *populus captivus* etc.

## II. WITH AN OBJECT (0).

No example.

## THE CHRONICLE\* (46).

## A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (13).

## I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (9).

NSM. (2):—1097 E<sup>a, b</sup> (p. 233<sup>b</sup>): Ða uppon sancte Michaelæs mæssan iii<sup>i</sup>°N<sup>o</sup> October ætywde an selcuð steorra on æfen *scynende* & sona to setle *gangende* (or pred.?).

NPM. (7):—1069 D<sup>a, b, c</sup> (p. 204<sup>m</sup>): & heom com ðær togenes Eadgar cild & Waldðeof eorl & Mærleswegen & Gospatric eorl mid Norðymbrum & ealle ða land leoden *ridende* & *gangende* (or both pred.?) mid unmætan here swiðe *fæggende* & swa ealle anrædlice to Eoferwiç foron.—1075 D<sup>a, b</sup> (p. 210<sup>m</sup>): ac he sylf & his ferestan menn ferdon eft ongean to Scotlande, sume hreowlice on fotan *gangende* & sume earmlice *ridende* (or both pred.?).—1123 E (p. 251<sup>t</sup>): & riden ðær *sprecende* (or pred.?). Ða aseh dune se biscop etc.—1086 E<sup>a</sup> (p. 218<sup>b</sup>): & twegen halige menn ðe hyrsu-medon Gode on ancersetle *wuniende* ðær wæron forbearnde.

## II. WITH AN OBJECT (4).

NSM. (1):—1087 E (p. 223<sup>m</sup>): Ðas ðing *geseonde* se arwurða biscop Wlstan wearð swiðe gedrefed on his mode.

NPM. (1):—1083 E: & sume crupon under & gyrne cleopedon to Gode, his miltse *biddende*.

ASN. (2):—656 E<sup>b</sup> (p. 33<sup>t</sup>): seo papa seonde ða his writ, ðus *cwæðend*: Ic Uitalianus papa etc.—Cf. 675 E (p. 35<sup>b</sup>): And seo papa seonde ða his gewrite to Englalande, ðus *cwæðende*.

*Note: Latin Participles in The Chronicle.*—Several instances of a Latin appositive participle occur in the *Chronicle* but are not translated into A.-S.: 431 E: *apparens*; 625 E: *constans*.

\*The superior letters outside the parenthesis distinguish the several examples of the same year; those inside the parenthesis are explained by Plummer.



## B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (33).

## 1. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (33).

NSM. (12):—1104 E (p. 239<sup>t</sup>): on ðam Tiwæsdæge ðær æfter ætywðan feower circulas to ðam middæge onbutan ðære sunnan hwites hiwes, ælc under oðran *gebroiden* swylce hi gemette wæron.—50 F: Her Paulus *gebunden* wearð gesend to Rome (or pred.?).—755 F: & Sibertes brōðer, Cynehard *gehaten*, ofsloh Cynewulf on Merantune. So: 604 A (or pred.?), 777 E, 1130 E.—Other examples:—1118 E and 1127 E<sup>b</sup>: *gewundod*; 1154 E: *luued* (or post-positive attrib.?): 3 A: *ofsticod*; 1086 E<sup>b</sup>: *ungederad* (or pred.?): 1048 E: *unswican* (or pred.?).

NSN. (1):—1127 E<sup>a</sup> (p. 256<sup>b</sup>): ðær wæs se Scotte kyng Daudi & eall ða heaued *læred* & læuued ðæt wæs on Engleland. [May be considered plural as by Plummer.]

NPM. (15):—1066 D<sup>a, b, c</sup> (p. 199<sup>m</sup>): ða Engliscan hi hindan hetelice slogon oð ðæt hig sume to scype coman, sume *adruncen* & sume eac *forbærnde* & swa mislice *forfarene*, ðæt ðær wæs lyt to lafe.—Other examples:—*gehadode*: 995 F, 1012 E, 1095 E, 1102 E; 449 A: *geleaðade*; 1083 E<sup>a</sup>: *gewepnede* (or pred.?): *hadode*: 1014 E, 1023 D, 1046 E (manig mann ðærto ge *hadode* ge læwede); 1096 E: *hungerbitene*; 911 A: *unbefohtene* (or pred.?): 1070 E: *wepnode*.

GSM. (1):—1100 E (p. 235<sup>b</sup>): ælces mannes *gehadodes* & læwedes.

GPM. (1):—656 E<sup>a</sup> (p. 29<sup>b</sup>): be his brōðre ræd . . . & be al his gewiten ræd, *læred* & lawed, ðe on his kynerice wæron.

DSM. (1):—1053 C<sup>o</sup>: se Wulfwi feng to ðam biscoprice ðe Ulf hæfde be him libbendum & *ofadræfdum*.

ASN. (2):—992 E<sup>a, b</sup>: & ðæt scip genamon eall *gewæpnod* & *gewædod*.

## II. WITH AN OBJECT (0).

No example.

*Note.*—As the examples show, in many instances the participles (both present and preterite) above cited from the *Chronicle* are in immediate juxtaposition with intransitive verbs like *ætiewan* and *faran*; hence even more examples than those queried may be predicative rather than appositive.

## THE LAWS (19).

### A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (4).

#### I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (3).

ASM. (1):—Ine, c. 35: Se ðe ðeof slīhð, he mot aðe gecyðan, ðæt he hine *fleondne* for ðeof sloge.

ASN. (2):—Cnut II., c. 24, Int.<sup>a & b</sup>: nan ðinge . . . ne *libbende* ne *liegende*.

*Note: Accusative Compounds.*—Three accusative-compound participles occur in the Laws:—Ine, c. 45: Burg-bryce mon sceal betan . . . gesiðcundes monnes *landhæbbendes* xxxv; and Ine, c. 51<sup>a & b</sup>: Gif gesiðcund mon *landagende* forsitte fierd, geselle cxx scill. and ðolie his landes; *unlandagende* lx scill. As the examples show, however, the participles are used attributively rather than appositively.

#### II. WITH AN OBJECT (1).

NSM. (1):—Wihtræd, c. 18: Preost hine clænsie sylfæs soðe, in his halgum hrægle ætforan wiofode, ðus *cweðende*: “Ueritatem dico Christo, non mentior.”

### B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (15).

#### I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (15).

NSM. (1):—Ine, c. 39: Gif hwa fare *unaliēfed* fram his hlaforde (MS. B. has *unalyfede*, which is perhaps a pure adverb).

NSN. (2):—Cnut II., c. 71, § 4<sup>a & b</sup>: *twa hors, i. gesadelod and oðer ungesadelod.*

NPM. (2):—Æthelred VII., Appendix, § 7: *ealle . . . gehadode and læwede*; Wihtræd, c. 4: *ungestrodyne.*

NPN. (4):—Cnut II., c. 71, Introduction: *ðæt syndon viii. hors, iv. gesadelode & iv. unsadelode.*—So *gesadelode* and *unsadelode* in Cnut II., c. 71, § 1<sup>a & b</sup>.

GPM. (1):—Eadmund II., Introduction: *mid minra witena geðeahhte, ge hadedra ge læwedra.*

DSM. (2):—Ine, c. 18, title: *Be cirlescum ðeofe gefongennum*; Ine, c. 20, title: *Be feorran cumenum men butan wege gemetton* [MS. H.: *gemettum*].

DSN. (2):—Ælfred, c. 10, title: *Be twelfhyndes monnes wife forlegennum*; Ælfred, c. 9, title: *Be bearneacnum wife ofslægennum* [MS. B: *Be ðam ðæt man ofslea wif mid cilde*].

ASM. (1):—Ælfred, c. 35, § 4: *Gif he hine to preoste bescire unbundenne.*

## II. WITH AN OBJECT (0).

No example.

## BENEDICT<sup>1</sup> (72).

### A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (63).

#### I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (25).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (12):—

NSM. (3):—2. 18: and *ðus acsiende cwyrð* = 4. 21: *Et quaerens Dominus . . . iterum dicit.*—Other examples:—47. 16: *arisende* = 88. 17: *surgentes*; 52. 9: *wuniende mid upahefednesse* = 98. 2: *elatus.*

NPM. (9):—47. 12: *hy butan elcunge arisende caffice gehwylc oðerne forestæppe and to ðam Godes weorce efste* = 88. 13: *absque mora surgentes festinent.*—Other examples:—

62. 15<sup>b</sup>: *drincende* = 118. 2: *bibentibus*; 62. 15<sup>a</sup>: *etende* = 118. 1: *comedentibus*; 134. 17\*: *libbende* = 231. 8: *victitantes*; 135. 23<sup>b</sup>\*: *sittende* = 231. 36: *sedentes*; 138. 2\*: *ðurhwuniende* = 233. 22: *persistentes*; *wuniende* (*fram*) = *remoti*, 134. 18\* = 231. 11; = *stantes*, 135. 23<sup>a</sup>\* = 231. 35; 137. 14\*: *wyrcende* = 233. 6: *operantes*.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which finite verb is usually subordinate or in immediate connection with an appositive participle (3):—

NSM. (2):—133. 13: Swa hwylc swa *onettende* efst to ðam heofonlican eðle, gefreme ærest = 206. 11: Quisquis ergo ad patriam coelestem *festinas* . . . perface; 68. 14: *hreou-sigende* = 128. 20: *pænileat*.

NPM. (1):—68. 21: wen is, ðæt sume oððe sleadlice lagon and slepon, oððe *sittende* mid idelre spellunge deofle to micelne forwyrdes intingan gesealden = 130. 4: erit forte talis qui se aut re collocet et dormiat, aut certe *sedeat* sibi foris, vel fabulis vacet, et detur occasio maligno.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin ablative of manner or of means (1):—

NSM. (1):—71. 7: butan he ðærrihte beforan eallum hine *dædbetende* geeaðmede = 134. 15: nisi *satisfactione* ibi coram omnibus humiliatus fuerit.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (1):—

NPM. (1):—9. 23: æfre unstaðolfæste and *woriende* = 16. 9: semper *vagi* et numquam stabiles.

5. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (1):—

NPM. (1):—9. 7: geleorniað ðæt hie *anstandonde* . . . ongan deofol . . . winnan magan = 14. 4: et beni instructi . . . jam *sine consolatione alterius* . . . contra vitia pugnare sufficiunt.

\*All starred references are to the Appendix of Benedict<sup>1</sup>.

6. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (7):—

NSM. (4):—31. 14: *geomriende* clypude = 58. 13; 24. 6: *smeagende* gehealde = 46. 24; 4. 15<sup>o</sup>: *tremegende* = 8. 21; 60. 1: *cweðe* . . . *ðanciende* = 112. 3.

NPM. (3):—132. 1: *betende* = 204. 3; 2. 10: *elciende* = 4. 15; 135. 6: *swindende* = 231. 20.

## II. WITH AN OBJECT (38).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (25):—

NSM. (11):—22. 15: *wið ðone unðeaw hine bewarode se witega, ðus cweðende* = 44. 16: *quod se cavere Propheta indicat, dicens*.—So *cweðende* = *dicens*: 4. 7 = 8. 13; 24. 14 = 48. 7.—Other examples: 26. 14: *geefenlæcende* = 52. 5: *imitans*; 4. 15: *gefillende* = 8. 21: *complens*; *gehyrende* = *audiens*, 2. 19 = 4. 25, 15. 6 = 26. 17; 30. 3: *healdende* = 56. 19: *habens*; 27. 2: *ne lætende* = 52. 10: *sustinens*; 54. 9: *ondrædende* = 100. 14: *timens*; 4. 15<sup>a</sup>: *wyrcende* = 8. 21: *complens*.

NSF. (1):—2. 9: *sio godcunde stefn myngað and clypað, ðus cweðende* = 4. 14: *divina quotidie clamans quid nos admoneat vox dicens*.

NSN. (3):—25. 12: *Be ðam halig gewrit monað, ðus cweðende* = 50. 9: *Unde Scriptura praecipit, dicens*.—So *cweðende* = *dicens*, 27. 19 = 54. 2, 28. 15 = 54. 14.

NPM. (10):—64. 13: *we ðeah manna untrumnesse and tydernesse besceawiende gelyfað, ðæt etc.* = 122. 5: *Tamen infirmorum contuentes imbecillitatem, credimus*.—Other examples: 134. 24\*: *ascyriende* = 231. 16: *remoti*; 135. 27\*: *begyrende* = 232. 2: *captantes*; 59. 21: *biddende* = 112. 2: *postulantes*; 4. 3: *clipiende* = 8. 10: *dicentes*; 70. 7: *clypiende* = 132. 14: *dicens*; 3. 14: *cweðende* = 6. 17: *dicentes*; 11. 8: *forhogiende* = 18. 21: *contemnentes*; 27. 22: *gefillende* = 54. 5: *adimplentes*; 87. 5: *secgende* = 154. 7: *dicens*.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which finite verb generally is subordinate or is in immediate connection with an appositive participle (7):—

NSM. (6):—25. 10: *clypiende* = 50. 3: *dicit*; *cweðende* = *dicat*, 11. 6 = 18. 18, 26. 2 = 50. 20; *ib.* = *ait*, 21. 9 = 42. 8; *ib.* = *dicit*, 51. 14 = 96. 9; *ib.* = *dicant*, 82. 24 (Wells Fragment) = 152. 5.

NSN. (1):—22. 10: *clypiende* = 44. 12: *clamat*.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (1):—

NPM. (1):—134. 13\*: ðe . . . westestowa and ælætu and anwunung gelufiað. *geefenlæcende* Eliañ etc. = 231. 6: *ad imitationem* scilicet Eliae.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin equivalent (5):—

NSM. (2):—4. 10: *clypiende* = 8. 16; 101. 6: *fæstniende* = 166. 16.

NPM. (3):—131. 15: *awyrpende* (MS. F.: *awyrpen*) = 204. 1; 6. 1: *geefenlæcende* = 12. 2; 138. 8: *ðicggende* = 233. 27.

## B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (9).

### I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (8).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (2):—

NSM. (2):—2. 3: *gegremed* = 4. 6: *irritatus*; 28. 2: *geondead* = *angaritia*; 7. 54.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerundive (1):—

NSM. (1):—34. 2: æfter ðam fylige capitel of ðæra apostola lare gemyndelice butan bec *gesæd* = 64. 7: *Lectio sequatur, ex corde recitanda*.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (2):—

NPM. (2):—44. 22<sup>a & b</sup>: eala ðær we *asolcene* and *awacode* on anre wucan gelæsten = 82. 26: quod nos *tepidi* utinam septimana integra persolvamus.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin equivalent (3):—

NSM. (1):—28. 6: *geneadod* = 54. 9 (cf. 28. 2, where *geneadod* = *angariati*).

NPM. (2):—11. 16<sup>a & b</sup>: *getrymede* and *anbryrde* = 20. 5.

## II. WITH AN OBJECT (1).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (1):—

DPM. (1):—25. 16: and nu fram ðam englum us *betæhtum* ure weorc . . . beoð gebodude = 50. 13: et ab Angelis nobis *deputatis* . . . opera nostra nuntiantur.

## THE BLICKLING HOMILIES (52).

### A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (36).

#### I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (27).

NSM. (10):—235. 12: Ond ðus *cweðende* se halga Andreas alette his heafod ofer ænne his discipula & he onslep.—Other examples:—133. 17: *cumende*; 193. 8: *dwolgende*; 249. 20: *efstende* (or pred. ?); 113. 29: *gnorningende* (by Flamme classed as pred. (§ 169), by Morris translated as appos.); 179. 20: *leogende*; *lociende*: 229. 28, 245. 8<sup>a</sup>, 245. 16; 231. 9: *ðurhwunigende*.

NSF. (5):—5. 8<sup>a & b</sup>: Gehyron we nu to hwylcum gemete seo arwyrðe fæmne & seo halige, on hire cantice *gefeonde* and *blissigende*, sang & ðus cwæð.—7. 16: ðæt Maria . . . smeade & *swigende* ðohte hwæt seo halettung wære. [Flamme (§ 169. 2) classes *swigende* as pred.; but Morris correctly translates: “and silently considered.” *Swigende* may be considered an adverb.] 249. 1<sup>a & b</sup>: *hrymende*, *wepende*.

NSN. (1):—199. 17 : Ða wæs he mid yrre swiðlice onstýred, forðon ðe hit [= hryðær] swa *wedende* eode, & swa ofermodlice ferde. [Flamme (§ 169) classes *wedende* as pred.; but Morris correctly translates: “because it had gone about so madly and had behaved so arrogantly.” Clearly *wedende* is coördinate with *ofermodlice*, and may like it be classed as an adverb.]

NPM. (5):—225. 17 : cumað *arisende* wulfas, todrifað ðine heorde.—Other examples :—*gefeonde* : 201. 10, 203. 2 (or pred.?), 207. 8 (or pred.?) ; 239. 27 : *ingangende*.

NPN. (1):—243. 5 : and *ingangende* on ðæt carcern hie [= ða deoflu] gestodon on gesihðe ðæs eadigan Andreas.

DSM. (2):—115. 18<sup>a</sup> : we him *fleondum* fylgeað.—245. 3 : Ðus *gebiddende* ðam halgan Andrea Drihtnes stefn wæs geworden on Ebreisc, cweðende.

DPM. (2):—171. 11<sup>a & b</sup> : swa him Drihten Crist, eallum rihtgelyfdum mannum *wunigendum* for his noman, & ðurhwuniggendum in tintregum on soðre andetnesse oð ende his lifes untweogendlice, geheht & cwæð.

ASM. (1):—115. 18<sup>b</sup> : & hine *feallendne* lufað.

## II. WITH AN OBJECT (9).

NSM. (4):—239. 22 : he gesæt be ðam swere *anbidende* hwæt him gelimpan scolde (or pred.?) ; 249. 17<sup>a & b</sup> : he ðær wunode mid him seofon dagas, *lærende* and *strangende* hira heortan on geleafan . . . Cristes.—57. 7 : *spiwende*.

NSF. (2):—*cweðende* : 229. 27, 245. 4.

NPM. (1):—133. 27 : Swylce is gecweden ðæt hie ealle on yppan wunodon, ðonen *bidende* ðæs Halgan Gastes.

NPN. (1):—243. 7 : hie [= ða deoflu] gestodon on gesihðe ðæs eadigan Andreas, and hine *bismriende* mid myclere bismre, and hie cwædon.

ASM. (1):—215. 21 : *cweðendne*.



## B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (16).

## I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (15).

NSM. (4):—89. 34<sup>b</sup>: *raðe* he lifgende ut eode of his byrgenne mid his agenre mihte *aweht*.—87. 36: & *befealden* to Hælendes cneowum he cwæð.—Other examples:—187. 28: *gebeagod*; 225. 33: *getrymed*.

NSF. (1):—197. 20: Donne is ðære on neaweste sum swiðe mære burh betwih ðære sæ seo is nemned Adriaticus on ðæm munte Garganus *geseted* se is haten Sepontus.

NPM. (5):—85. 9: Hie ða swiðe forhte & *abregde* ðus cwædon.—Other examples:—221. 28<sup>c</sup>: *gegyrede*; 221. 28<sup>a</sup>: *gesceldode*; 221. 28<sup>b</sup>: *gesperode*; 171. 28: *geweorðode*.

NPF. (1):—209. 36: he geseah ðæt on ðæm clife hangodan on ðæm is gean bearwum manige sweorte saula be heora handum *gebundne*. [Flamme (§ 174. 2) says this wavers between appos. and pred.]

NPN. (1):—127. 33: Swylce eac syndon on ðære myclan cirican ehta eagðyrelu swiðe mycele of glæse *geworht*. [Flamme (§ 173) thinks that *geworht* is possibly predicative, but Morris translates it as appositive.]

ASM. (2):—11. 7: Arweorðian we Crist on binne *asetene*; 181. 1: *beheafðodne*.

APF. (1):—31. 20: ðas dæda ðus *gedone* from Drihtne (but the text is corrupt).

## II. WITH AN OBJECT (1).

DSF. (1):—197. 6: se ðe is on ealra ymbhwyrfte to weorðienne & to wuldrienne his ciricean, gehweðer ge his agen geweorc ge on his naman *gehalgod* (but the passage is corrupt).

*Note*.—The text is too corrupt to construe *ahafen* in 115. 32.

## ÆLFRIC'S HOMILIES,\* THORPE (676).

## A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (477).

## I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (203).

NSM. (90):—II. 78<sup>b</sup>: *se sceaða on hine gelyfende* his synna geandette. So: I. 62<sup>b1</sup>; II. 130<sup>a6</sup>.—II. 132<sup>b1&2</sup>: *se biscop, scinende on . . . geearnungum and . . . geðincðum*, on heofenan rice, mid ðam Ælme Sc. on ecere blisse *rixende* wuldrað. So *scinende*: I. 466<sup>a</sup>; II. 352<sup>a2</sup>, 502<sup>b1</sup>.—Other examples:—I. 386<sup>a2</sup>: *andbidigende*; I. 390<sup>b3</sup>: *arisende*; I. 226<sup>b</sup>: *astigende*; II. 136<sup>a1</sup>: *awegferende*; II. 176<sup>b1</sup>: *bifigende*; *blissigende*: I. 340<sup>a1&2</sup>, 580<sup>b</sup>, 596<sup>a4&5</sup>, II. 426<sup>a</sup>; II. 300<sup>b1</sup>: *byrnende*; I. 516<sup>b</sup>: *cnucigende*; I. 124<sup>a</sup>: *dædbetende*; *drohtni(g)ende*: I. 398<sup>b</sup>, II. 546<sup>b1</sup>; II. 82<sup>b</sup>: *ehtende*; *fægnigende*: I. 596<sup>a1</sup>, II. 312<sup>a3</sup>; II. 442<sup>b</sup>: *farende*; *feallende*: I. 380<sup>b2</sup>, 390<sup>b2</sup>; *forhtigende*: II. 40<sup>b</sup>, 142<sup>b2</sup>, 176<sup>b2</sup>; *forðstæppende*: I. 278<sup>a</sup>, 500<sup>a2</sup>, II. 90<sup>a1</sup>; II. 360<sup>a</sup>: *fundigende*; II. 176<sup>b4</sup>: *ge-seonde*; I. 56<sup>b1</sup>: *gewitende*; I. 410<sup>a</sup>: *gyddigende*; II. 246<sup>a1</sup>: *haftigende*; *hangi(g)ende*: I. 594<sup>a1</sup>, 596<sup>b8</sup>, II. 256<sup>a</sup>, 260<sup>b</sup>; I. 380<sup>b3</sup>: *hreosende*; II. 302<sup>a</sup>: *hrymende* (or *pred.?*); II. 152<sup>b1</sup>: *liegende*; II. 474<sup>b</sup>: *lutiende*; *lybbende*: II. 152<sup>b2</sup>, 364<sup>b1</sup>, 500<sup>a2</sup>, 502<sup>b2</sup>; I. 54<sup>b</sup>: *miltsigende*; II. 182<sup>a2</sup>: *onbe-seonde*; II. 134<sup>a</sup>: *plegende*; I. 294<sup>b</sup>: *reordigende*; *sittende*: I. 346<sup>a1</sup>, 548<sup>b</sup>, II. 134<sup>b2</sup>, 382<sup>b1</sup>; II. 500<sup>a1</sup>: *smeagende*; II. 138<sup>a2</sup>: *standende*; *suwi(g)ende*: II. 230<sup>a</sup>, 350<sup>a2</sup>; I. 480<sup>b</sup>: *sweltende*; I. 338<sup>b2</sup>: *syngigende*; I. 596<sup>b2</sup>: *tihtende*; *truwi(g)ende*: I. 2<sup>b</sup>, II. 478<sup>a1</sup>; I. 374<sup>a</sup>: *ðeotende*; II. 168<sup>a3</sup>: *ðrutigende*; II. 204<sup>b1</sup>: *ðurhwunigende*; II. 130<sup>a3</sup>: *under-fonde*; II. 140<sup>b3</sup>: *unforhtigende*; II. 164<sup>b</sup>: *wedende*; I. 52<sup>b</sup>: *welwillende* (or *adverb?*); *wepende*: II. 134<sup>b</sup>; *writende*: II. 332<sup>b1</sup>, 348<sup>a1</sup>; *wunigende*: I. 134<sup>a</sup>, 150<sup>a2&3</sup>, 232<sup>a</sup>, 326<sup>b</sup>, 346<sup>a2</sup>, II. 142<sup>b3</sup>, 440<sup>a</sup>, 498<sup>b1</sup>; I. 432<sup>a</sup>: *ysrigende*.

\* The superior letters (a and b) refer respectively to the top and the bottom of the page; the superior figures distinguish the several examples.

NSF. (11):—I. 438<sup>b 1 & 2</sup>: *heo drohtnode gemænelice mid ðam apostolicum werode, infarende and utfarende betwux him.*—Other examples:—I. 98<sup>a 2</sup>: *donde*; I. 146<sup>b</sup>: *lybbende*; I. 66<sup>b 1</sup>: *rarigende*; I. 440<sup>a 1</sup>: *smeagende*; I. 564<sup>a 2</sup>: *utflo-wende*; *wepende*: I. 566<sup>b 1</sup>, II. 146<sup>b</sup>; II. 434<sup>b</sup>: *writende*; II. 182<sup>b 4</sup>: *wunigende*.

NSN. (7):—I. 372<sup>b 2</sup>: *Ðæt folc ða mid anre stemne clypigende cwæð.* So: I. 594<sup>b 2</sup>.—Other examples:—I. 566<sup>b 2</sup>: *blissigende*; II. 140<sup>a 3</sup>: *bræstligende*; II. 450<sup>b</sup>: *hreosende*; II. 142<sup>b 1</sup>: *sprecende*; I. 296<sup>b</sup>: *wunigende*.

NS. M. or F. (2):—I. 546<sup>b 1 & 2</sup>: *fyligde heap . . . manna . . . ðurhwunigende, to Criste geðeodende.*

NS. F. or N. (1):—I. 324<sup>b 1</sup>: *gecynd . . . wunigende.*

NPM. (62):—I. 610<sup>a 2 & 3</sup>: *Sind eac sume steorran leoht-beamede, færllice arisende and hrædlice gewitende.*—I. 592<sup>b 1 & 2</sup>: *ðær ge symle blissiað, blowende and mid Criste riwigende.* So *riwigende* in I. 500<sup>b</sup>.—Other examples: I. 534<sup>b</sup>: *bid-dende*; *blissigende*: I. 56<sup>b 4</sup>, 564<sup>a</sup>; II. 258<sup>a</sup>: *bugende*; I. 596<sup>b 4</sup>: *clypigende*; II. 454<sup>a 1</sup>: *cumende*; I. 68<sup>b</sup>: *dædbetende*; *drohtni(g)ende*: I. 536<sup>b</sup>, II. 158<sup>b 2</sup>, 296<sup>b 2</sup>, 404<sup>a</sup>; *dweligende*: I. 340<sup>b</sup>, II. 124<sup>b</sup>; *feallende*: I. 38<sup>b</sup>, 560<sup>a 2</sup>, II. 126<sup>b</sup>, 214<sup>a</sup>, 236<sup>b</sup>, 246<sup>b 1</sup>; II. 34<sup>a 2</sup>: *feohtende*; II. 334<sup>a 1</sup>: *fleogende*; I. 352<sup>a</sup>: *forðstæppende*; II. 130<sup>b 1</sup>: *gelyfende*; I. 46<sup>b</sup>: *hrymende*; II. 138<sup>a 3</sup>: *licgende*; I. 544<sup>b 2</sup>: *lutigende*; II. 130<sup>a 4</sup>: *lybbende*; *miltsigende*: I. 370<sup>a</sup>, 540<sup>b</sup>; I. 78<sup>b 2</sup>: *niðerfeallende*; *scinende*: II. 136<sup>b 1</sup>, 496<sup>a</sup>; I. 606<sup>b 3</sup>: *singende*; *sprecende*: II. 248<sup>b</sup>, 284<sup>a 2</sup>; II. 136<sup>b 2</sup>: *stymende*; II. 212<sup>b</sup>: *suwigende*; *sweltende*: II. 34<sup>a 3</sup>, 554<sup>a</sup>; I. 496<sup>b 2</sup>: *syngigende*; I. 606<sup>b 1</sup>: *tæcende*; I. 606<sup>b 2</sup>: *tihtende*; I. 84<sup>a 1</sup>: *upaspringende*; I. 334<sup>b 3</sup>: *wædli-gende*; *wedende*: I. 50<sup>b 1</sup>, 470<sup>a</sup>, II. 232<sup>b</sup>; II. 454<sup>a 2</sup>: *wepende*; *wunigende*: I. 150<sup>a 3</sup>, 228<sup>b 2</sup>, 238<sup>a</sup>, 338<sup>a</sup> (cf. *Abs. Ptc. in A.-S.*, p. 11), 406<sup>a 2</sup>, 544<sup>b 1</sup>, 610<sup>b</sup>, II. 204<sup>b 2</sup>; II. 236<sup>a</sup>: *yrsigende*.

NPN. (2):—II. 336<sup>a</sup>: *Ða deoflu feohtende scuton heora fyrenan flan ongean ða sawle*;—II. 350<sup>b 3</sup>: *hlihhende*.

NP. M. or N. (1):—I. 60<sup>a 1</sup>: *weras and wif . . . fægnigende.*

GPM. (2):—I. 30<sup>b 2</sup>: wearð gesewen micel menigu heofon-lices werodes God herigendra and *singendra* (or substantive?). So: I. 38<sup>a 2</sup>

DSM. (4):—I. 494<sup>a</sup>: and *clypigendum* Drihtne to ðam ecan life cafllice geandwyrð (or Abs.? Cf. *Abs. Ptc. in A.-S.*, p. 10).—I. 324<sup>b 3</sup>: to ðam geleaffullan heape, on ðysre worulde *wunigende*.—Other examples:—I. 362<sup>a</sup>: *cumendum* (or Abs.? Cf. *Abs. Ptc. in A.-S.*, p. 10); II. 180<sup>b 1</sup>: *ridendum*.

DPM. (6):—II. 186<sup>b 1 & 2</sup>: cyððe his forðsið on ær sumum his leorning-cnihtum mid him *drohtnigendum* and sumum oðrum on fyrlenum stowum *wunigendum*.—Other examples:—*gelyfendum*: I. 228<sup>b</sup>, II. 284<sup>a 3</sup>; I. 440<sup>a 2</sup>: *onlociendum*; II. 284<sup>a 4</sup>: *spreendum*.

DDM. (1):—II. 172<sup>b 2</sup>: ne æteowode ic inc bam *slapendum*?

ASM. (4):—II. 418<sup>a 3, 4, 5</sup>: underfoh me nu *behreowsiendne*, ðone ðe ðu oð ðis *andigendne* and *tælendne* forbære; I. 496<sup>b 1</sup>: *lutigende*.

ASF. (2):—I. 376<sup>a</sup>: se dry worhte ða ærene næddran, *styrigende* swylce heo cucu wære; II. 344<sup>a 2</sup>: *byrnende*.

ASN. (2):—II. 508<sup>b 1</sup>: cwæð ðæt he hit [= *treow*] underfenge *feallende* to foldan.—II. 150<sup>a</sup>: *licigende*.

APM. (4):—II. 246<sup>b 4</sup>: *feallende*; I. 334<sup>b 1</sup>: *licigende*; II. 154<sup>a</sup>: *lybbende*; II. 242<sup>b 2</sup>: *sittende*.

APF. (2):—II. 350<sup>b 1 & 2</sup>: ða deoflu gelæddon fif manna sawla, hreowlice *gnorniende* and *grimetende*, into ðam fyre.

## 2. WITH AN OBJECT (274).

NSM. (176):—II. 142<sup>a</sup>: Ða begann se wer dreorig wepan, *anðracigende* ðæs ungelimpes.—II. 188<sup>a</sup>: stod sum arwurðe wer mid . . . gyrlum, *axigende* etc.—II. 164<sup>a 2</sup>: Benedictus . . . tæhte him ðæs dædbote, *bebeodende* ðæt etc.—I. 372<sup>b 1</sup>: Se apostol genealæhte ðam lice mid aðenedum earmum, ðus *biddende*. So: I. 126<sup>a 1</sup>, 418<sup>b 1</sup>, 428<sup>a 1</sup> (w. gen.), 434<sup>b</sup> (ib.), 452<sup>a</sup> (ib.), 456<sup>b</sup>, 464<sup>b 1</sup>, 598<sup>a 3</sup>, II. 26<sup>a</sup>, 110<sup>b</sup>, 134<sup>b 3</sup>, 138<sup>b</sup>, 144<sup>b 2</sup>, 180<sup>b 2</sup>, 304<sup>a 2</sup>, 304<sup>b</sup>, 418<sup>a 1</sup>, 498<sup>b 2</sup> (w. gen.), 504<sup>b 2</sup>.—I.

62<sup>a</sup>: Iohannes beseah ðus *cwæðende* (*cwæðende*). So: I. 50<sup>b 2</sup>, 66<sup>b 3</sup>, 78<sup>b 1 & 3</sup>, 88<sup>b</sup>, 98<sup>a 1</sup>, 120<sup>a & b</sup>, 124<sup>b</sup>, 126<sup>a</sup>, 192<sup>b</sup>, 206<sup>a</sup>, 208<sup>b</sup>, 222<sup>b</sup>, 242<sup>a</sup>, 264<sup>a</sup>, 294<sup>a</sup>, 314<sup>b</sup>, 324<sup>b 2</sup>, 328<sup>a</sup>, 350<sup>b</sup>, 358<sup>a 1 & 2</sup>, 364<sup>a</sup>, 366<sup>a</sup>, 370<sup>a</sup>, 376<sup>b</sup>, 380<sup>a</sup>, 380<sup>b 1</sup>, 390<sup>a</sup>, 390<sup>b 1</sup>, 404<sup>b</sup>, 406<sup>a 1</sup>, 418<sup>a 2</sup>, 430<sup>a</sup>, 436<sup>b</sup>, 442<sup>b</sup>, 450<sup>a</sup>, 450<sup>b</sup>, 480<sup>a</sup>, 482<sup>a</sup>, 502<sup>b 2</sup>, 510<sup>b 2</sup>, 520<sup>a</sup> (= *dicens*), 522<sup>a & b</sup>, 530<sup>a</sup>, 534<sup>a</sup>, 538<sup>b 1</sup>, 548<sup>a</sup>, 550<sup>a 2</sup>, 560<sup>b 3</sup>, 568<sup>a 1 & 2</sup>, 568<sup>b 2</sup>, 570<sup>b</sup>, 572<sup>b 2</sup>, 576<sup>a</sup>, 596<sup>a 3</sup>, 600<sup>b 1</sup>, 604<sup>b</sup>, 606<sup>a</sup>, 610<sup>a 4</sup>; II. 10<sup>b</sup>, 12<sup>b</sup>, 14<sup>a</sup>, 16<sup>a</sup>, 34<sup>a 4</sup>, 52<sup>b</sup>, 62<sup>a 2</sup>, 72<sup>b</sup>, 84<sup>a 1</sup>, 112<sup>a 1 & 2</sup>, 182<sup>b 1</sup>, 266<sup>b</sup>, 288<sup>a</sup>, 312<sup>b 1</sup>, 328<sup>b</sup>, 384<sup>a</sup>, 400<sup>a 1</sup>, 406<sup>b</sup>, 414<sup>b 2</sup>, 418<sup>a 2</sup>, 428<sup>a 1</sup>, 428<sup>b</sup>, 432<sup>b</sup>, 464<sup>b</sup>, 468<sup>a 1</sup>, 538<sup>a</sup>, 542<sup>b</sup>, 562<sup>b</sup>, 576<sup>a</sup>.—Other examples:—II. 540<sup>b 1</sup>: *belæwende*; *bigende*: II. 298<sup>b</sup>, 408<sup>b</sup>; II. 184<sup>b 1</sup>: *blissigende*; *bodi(g)ende*: I. 370<sup>b 1</sup>, 560<sup>a 1</sup>, II. 130<sup>a 1</sup>; II. 414<sup>b 1</sup>: *bysmrigende* (w. dat.); I. 48<sup>a</sup>: *clypigende*; I. 66<sup>a 2</sup>: *ferigende*; II. 446<sup>b 2</sup>: *forbugende*; II. 130<sup>a 2</sup>: *forhogigende*; II. 168<sup>b 1</sup>: *forhtigende*; II. 352<sup>a 3</sup>: *fylgende* (w. dat.); II. 418<sup>b 1 & 2</sup>: *geefenlæcende*; I. 78<sup>a 2</sup>: *gehyrende*; II. 376<sup>b 1 & 2</sup>: *getacnigende*; *hæbbende*: I. 126<sup>a</sup>, 130<sup>a 2</sup>; II. 432<sup>b</sup>: *herigende*; *lærende*: I. 370<sup>b 2</sup>, 596<sup>a 2</sup>; I. 400<sup>b 1</sup>: *liccetende*; I. 600<sup>b 2</sup>: *manigende*; II. 320<sup>a</sup>: *ofersceawigende*; II. 446<sup>b 1</sup>: *ondrædende*; I. 508<sup>a</sup>: *onstandende* (should be *on standende* ?); *reccende*: II. 350<sup>a 1</sup>, 356<sup>b</sup>; I. 388<sup>b</sup>: *sawende* (or pred. ?); *sceawi(g)ende*: II. 32<sup>a 2</sup>, 120<sup>a 3</sup>; *secende*: I. 338<sup>b 1</sup> (or pred. ?), II. 358<sup>a 2</sup>, 448<sup>a</sup>; I. 596<sup>b 3</sup>: *secgende*; I. 388<sup>a 1</sup>: *seðende*; II. 138<sup>a 1</sup>: *syngende*; II. 334<sup>b</sup>: *smeagende*; II. 182<sup>a 3</sup>: *swerigende*; *swuteligende*: II. 400<sup>a 2</sup>, 466<sup>a</sup>; II. 540<sup>b 2</sup>: *teonde*; *tihtende*: I. 528<sup>a 1</sup>, II. 328<sup>a</sup>; II. 326<sup>b 1</sup>: *toclypigende*; *todælcende*: I. 322<sup>b</sup> (w. dat.), II. 338<sup>b</sup>, 344<sup>a 1</sup>; I. 106<sup>b</sup>: *towurpende*; II. 128<sup>b</sup>: *ðeowigende* (w. dat.); *ðreagende*: II. 170<sup>b</sup>, 256<sup>a 2</sup>; I. 608<sup>a 1</sup>: *undergynnende*; II. 346<sup>b 2</sup>: *wilnigende* (w. gen.); *writende*: II. 272<sup>b 3</sup>, 364<sup>b 2</sup>; I. 572<sup>b 1</sup>: *wyr-cende*.

NSF. (16):—II. 76<sup>b</sup>: Seo endlyfte tid bið seo forwerode ealdnyss, ðam deaðe *genealæcende*.—Other examples:—*aræfni(g)ende*: I. 30<sup>b 3</sup>, 42<sup>b 1 & 2</sup>; *biddende*: I. 66<sup>b 2</sup>, 566<sup>a 2</sup>, II. 184<sup>a 1</sup>; *cwæðende*: I. 104<sup>b</sup>, 194<sup>b</sup>, 388<sup>a 2</sup>, 426<sup>a 3</sup>, II. 42<sup>a</sup>, 432<sup>b 2</sup>; *heorc-nigende*: II. 438<sup>b</sup> (w. dat.), 440<sup>a 2</sup> (*ib.*).—I. 98<sup>a 3</sup>: *ondrædende*; II. 182<sup>b 3</sup>: *ðeowigende*.

NSN. (8):—II. 578<sup>b</sup>: *folc ham gewende, ðancigende ðæm Ælmihtigan ealra his goda*.—Other examples:—*biddende*: I. 68<sup>a3</sup>, II. 140<sup>b2</sup>; *cweðende*: I. 200<sup>a</sup>, 594<sup>b3</sup>, II. 110<sup>a</sup>, 114<sup>a</sup>; II. 256<sup>b</sup>: *ðreagende*.

NS. M. or N. (1):—II. 342<sup>a</sup>: *sang . . . cweðende etc.*

NPM. (61):—I. 38<sup>a3</sup>: *hi . . . godum mannum sibbe bodedon, swutellice æteowiende ðæt etc.*—Other examples:—II. 200<sup>b</sup>: *anbidigende* (w. gen.); II. 548<sup>a</sup>: *andswariende*; *befrinende*: I. 78<sup>a</sup>, 104<sup>a</sup> (= *dicentes*); *biddende*: I. 74<sup>a</sup>, 562<sup>b</sup>, II. 30<sup>b2</sup>, 160<sup>b2</sup>, 176<sup>a</sup>, 396<sup>b</sup>, 484<sup>a</sup>, 486<sup>b</sup>; II. 252<sup>b1</sup>: *bigende*; *bodigende*: II. 492<sup>b1</sup>; II. 506<sup>a</sup>: *clypigende*; *cweðende*: I. 4<sup>a</sup>, 64<sup>a</sup>, 68<sup>b2</sup>, 510<sup>b1</sup> (= *dicentes*), 538<sup>b4</sup>, 560<sup>b3</sup>, 596<sup>b5</sup>, II. 112<sup>a3</sup>, 172<sup>b1</sup>, 252<sup>b2</sup>, 300<sup>a</sup>, 484<sup>b</sup>, 488<sup>a1</sup>; II. 168<sup>b2</sup>: *cyðende*; II. 534<sup>b2</sup>: *drincende*; II. 492<sup>b3</sup>: *dweiliende* (or pred. ?); II. 534<sup>b1</sup>: *etende*; I. 588<sup>b</sup>: *ferigende*; I. 526<sup>a</sup>: *gadrigende*; II. 226<sup>b</sup>: *geeuenlæcende*; I. 560<sup>a3</sup>: *gehyrsumigende* (w. dat.); I. 90<sup>a</sup>: *hæbbende*; *healdende*: I. 528<sup>a2</sup>, 538<sup>b3</sup>; *herigende*: I. 32<sup>a2</sup>, 42<sup>b4</sup>; II. 474<sup>a</sup>: *leasetende* (or pred. ?); *mærsigende*: I. 544<sup>a2</sup>, II. 194<sup>b</sup>; II. 248<sup>b2</sup>: *meldigende*; II. 34<sup>a1</sup>: *oferswiðende*; II. 490<sup>b2</sup>: *onlihtende*; II. 248<sup>a</sup>: *sleande*; I. 426<sup>b1</sup>: *swingende*; *ðancigende* (w. dat. and gen.): I. 102<sup>a</sup>, 606<sup>b4</sup>, II. 272<sup>b1</sup>; *ðeowigende* (w. dat.): II. 70<sup>b</sup>, 310<sup>a</sup>; II. 250<sup>a1</sup>: *wre-gende*; *wuldrigende*: I. 32<sup>a</sup>, 42<sup>b3</sup>; II. 130<sup>a5</sup>: *wundrigende* (w. gen.); II. 490<sup>b1</sup>: *wyrcende*.

NPN. (4):—II. 56<sup>b</sup>: *Æt ðam giftum wæron gesette six stæne ne wæterfatu, healdende ænlipige twyfealde gemetu oððe ðryfealde*.—II. 548<sup>a</sup>: *stodon twa heofonlice werod ætforan ðære cytan dura, singende heofonlicne sang* (or pred. ?);—*cweðende*: II. 414<sup>b3</sup>, 416<sup>a2</sup>.

NP. M. or N. (1):—I. 60<sup>a2</sup>: *weras and wif . . . cweðende*.

GP. (2):—I. 30<sup>b1</sup>: *wearð gesewen micel menigu heofon-lices werodes God herigendra*. So: I. 38<sup>a1</sup>.

DPM. (1):—II. 440<sup>b1</sup>: *swa swa he behet eallum him ðeniendum*.

APM. (4):—I. 334<sup>b2</sup>: *Manega Lazaras ge habbað nu liggende æt eowrum gatum, biddende eowre oferflowend-*

nysse. So: II. 330<sup>a</sup>.—Other examples:—I. 28<sup>a</sup>: *bodigende*; I. 296<sup>a</sup>: *cweðende*.

## B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (199).

### I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (194).

NSM. (94):—II. 182<sup>a1</sup>: he ða ðearle *ablicged* aweg tengde.  
—I. 10<sup>a</sup>: ðeos ðrynnys is an God; ðæt is se Fæder and his wisdom of him sylfum æfre *acenned*. So: I. 34<sup>b</sup>, 150<sup>a1</sup>, 222<sup>a</sup>, 278<sup>b2</sup>, 464<sup>b2</sup>, 500<sup>a1</sup>, II. 42<sup>b3</sup>, 204<sup>b3</sup>, 366<sup>a</sup>.—Other examples:—II. 352<sup>a1</sup>: *afylled*; II. 510<sup>b</sup>: *afyrht* (or pred.?): I. 550<sup>a1</sup>: *ahafen*; *ahangen*: II. 598<sup>a</sup>, 606<sup>b</sup>; *astreht*: I. 426<sup>b2</sup>, II. 186<sup>b3</sup>; II. 332<sup>b3</sup>: *æðelboren*; I. 434<sup>a2</sup>: *awed*; II. 254<sup>b</sup>: *awend*; I. 598<sup>b</sup>: *aworpen*; II. 120<sup>a1</sup>: *befangen*; I. 426<sup>a2</sup>: *befrinen*; I. 56<sup>b2</sup>: *bewæfed*; II. 382<sup>b3</sup>: *fornumen*; I. 66<sup>a1</sup>: *forscyldigod*; II. 424<sup>a</sup>: *fulfremed*; I. 594<sup>b1</sup>: *geæbyligd*; I. 414<sup>b2</sup>: *geancsumod*; II. 250<sup>a2</sup>: *gebolgen*; *gebyld*: II. 390<sup>b</sup>, 412<sup>b2</sup>; *gedrefed*: I. 414<sup>b1</sup>; II. 140<sup>a1</sup>: *geflogen*; *gefrætewod*: II. 118<sup>b</sup>; II. 306<sup>a1</sup>: *gefullod*; I. 52<sup>a2</sup>: *gefultumod*; *geglen(c)g(e)d*: II. 512<sup>b2</sup>, 518<sup>b2</sup>; II. 130<sup>b2</sup>: *gehadod*; II. 244<sup>a</sup>: *gehalgod*; *gehaten*: I. 502<sup>a</sup>, II. 152<sup>a2</sup>, 304<sup>a1</sup>, 308<sup>a1</sup>, 332<sup>b2</sup>, 348<sup>a2</sup>, 412<sup>b1</sup>, 488<sup>a2</sup>; *gehathyrt*: II. 374<sup>b</sup>, 424<sup>b</sup>; II. 250<sup>b2</sup>: *gelædd*; *gelaðod*: I. 128<sup>a</sup>, II. 54<sup>a</sup>; II. 270<sup>b</sup>: *geliffæst*; II. 250<sup>b1</sup>: *gelogod*; *gelyfed*: II. 152<sup>a1</sup>, 332<sup>b4</sup>; I. 468<sup>b2</sup>: *gemartyrod*; II. 158<sup>b1</sup>: *gemenged*; II. 348<sup>a3</sup>: *gemetegod*; I. 588<sup>b</sup>: *geneadod*; II. 24<sup>b</sup>: *geripod*; II. 42<sup>b2</sup>: *gesceapen*; *gescryd(d)*: I. 528<sup>b</sup>, 578<sup>b</sup> (or pred.?), II. 312<sup>b3</sup>, 382<sup>b2</sup>, 512<sup>b1</sup>; *geset(t)*: I. 126<sup>a3</sup>, 130<sup>a1</sup>, 218<sup>a1</sup>; II. 234<sup>b</sup>: *gesworen*; I. 428<sup>b</sup>: *getogen*; I. 614<sup>b</sup>: *geðread*; II. 36<sup>b</sup>: *geðungen*; II. 516<sup>b2</sup>: *gewæht*; *gewæpnod*: I. 450<sup>b2</sup>, II. 334<sup>a2</sup>, 502<sup>a</sup>; *geworht*: I. 278<sup>b1</sup>, II. 42<sup>b1</sup>; I. 426<sup>a1</sup>: *gewreged*; II. 518<sup>a</sup>: *gewuldrod*; I. 52<sup>a1</sup>: *oftorfod*; II. 150<sup>b</sup>: *onbryrd*; I. 290<sup>a</sup>: *rihtgelyfed*; II. 514<sup>a</sup>: *toswollen*; II. 372<sup>a</sup>: *unabeden*; II. 204<sup>a1</sup>: *unbegunnen*; I. 428<sup>a2</sup>: *ungeaxod*; II. 336<sup>b</sup>: *ungederod*; II. 204<sup>a2</sup>: *ungeendod*.

NSF. (14):—II. 546<sup>b3</sup>, 548<sup>a1</sup>: Hire modor, Redempta *gehaten*, stod hire ofer, micclum *afyrht* for ðam heofonlican

leohte. So *gehaten*: II. 284<sup>a1</sup>, 306<sup>a2</sup>, 584<sup>a</sup>.—Other examples:—I. 446<sup>a</sup>: *ahafen*; II. 58<sup>a</sup>: *astreht*; I. 502<sup>b</sup>: *aðrawn*; I. 60<sup>b</sup>: *awreht*; II. 90<sup>a2</sup>: *fortredene*; II. 138<sup>b2</sup>: *gelaðod*; II. 308<sup>b</sup>: *getintregod*; II. 498<sup>a</sup>: *geworht*; II. 586<sup>b</sup>: *ymbscryd* (or pred.?).

NSN. (16):—I. 184<sup>b1&2</sup>: *ða fif hlafas wæron swylce hit sæd wære, na on eorðan besawen, ac gemenigfyld fram ðam ðe eorðan geworhte*.—Other examples:—II. 572<sup>a</sup>: *afyrht*; II. 494<sup>b1&2</sup>: *agoten*; I. 352<sup>b</sup>: *beclysed*; II. 140<sup>a2</sup>: *bepæht*; II. 326<sup>a2</sup>: *forscyldgod*; II. 272<sup>b2</sup>: *geblodgod*; *gehaten*: II. 312<sup>b2</sup>, 438<sup>a</sup>; I. 508<sup>b2</sup>: *gescrydd*; I. 508<sup>b1</sup>: *gesett*; II. 510<sup>b3</sup>: *geðuht*; II. 140<sup>b1</sup>: *ofscamod*; II. 510<sup>b2</sup>: *toslopen*.

NS. F. or N. (1);—I. 42<sup>b4</sup>: *gemynd . . . geswutelod*.

NPM. (20):—I. 608<sup>a2</sup>: *ðæt we huru his genealæcendan dom, mid mislicum swinglum afærede, ondrædon*.—Other examples:—II. 326<sup>b2</sup>: *acennede*; I. 98<sup>a4</sup>: *ascyrede*; *asende*: I. 348<sup>a1&2</sup>, 540<sup>a</sup>; I. 560<sup>b1</sup>: *fordemde*; *fornumene*: II. 246<sup>b2</sup>, 348<sup>b</sup>; I. 84<sup>a2</sup>: *forsodene*; I. 566<sup>a1</sup>: *gedrehte*; I. 298<sup>b</sup>: *geglengede*; I. 504<sup>b</sup>: *gelærde*; I. 10<sup>a2</sup>: *gesceapene*; I. 538<sup>b2</sup>: *gescrydde*; II. 396<sup>b4</sup>: *gewæhte*; II. 246<sup>b3</sup>: *gewæpnode*; I. 526<sup>b</sup>: *gewriðene*; I. 544<sup>b4</sup>: *gewunode*; I. 610<sup>a1</sup>: *leoht-beamede*.

NPF. (3):—II. 174<sup>a</sup>: *Twa mynecenna wæron drohtnigende on gehendnysse his mynstres of æðelborenre mægðe asprungene*.—Other examples:—I. 366<sup>b</sup>: *bepæhte*; II. 298<sup>a</sup>: *geendode*.

NPN. (3):—II. 380<sup>a</sup>: *deoflu, ðe feollon to his fotum, mid fyrhte fornumene* (or pred.?).—II. 326<sup>a1</sup>: *comon cwelmbære deoflu swutellice gesewene, on sweartum hiwe, in to ðam cilde*.—II. 354<sup>b</sup>: *He befran ða hwam ða gebytlu gemynte wæron, swa mærllice getimbrode*.

GPM. (1):—II. 290<sup>a</sup>: *gelaðunge gecorenra manna to ðam ecan life*.

DSM. (2):—II. 546<sup>a</sup>: *G. awrat be sumum geðyldigan were, Stephanus gehaten*.—II. 308<sup>a2</sup>: *æt foran ðam casere, Aurelianus genamod*.



DSF. (2):—II. 494<sup>a</sup>: becomon to anre heafodbyrig, Suanir *gehaten*;—II. 546<sup>b2</sup>: be sumere mynecyne, Romula *gehaten*.

DPM. (1):—II. 286<sup>a</sup>: Sume gecwemdon englum on heora gesthusum *underfangenum* ðurh cumliðnyse.

ASM. (21):—II. 596<sup>b1, 2, & 3</sup>: Ic gelyfe on ænne Crist, Hælend Drihten, ðone ancennedan Godes Sunu, of ðam Fæder *acenned* ær ealle worulda, God of Gode, Leoht of Leohte, Soðne God of Soðum Gode, *acennedne* na *geworhtne*. So *acennedne*: I. 198<sup>a</sup>.—II. 168<sup>a1</sup>: asende his swurdboran, Riggo *gehaten* (*sic!*). So *gehaten* = an accusative: II. 358<sup>a1</sup>, 468<sup>a2</sup> (= *eo nomine*), 480<sup>b</sup>, 492<sup>b2</sup>.—II. 162<sup>b1</sup>: asende him ænne focan to lace mid attre *gemencged*.—Other examples:—II. 112<sup>b</sup>: *befangenne*; II. 598<sup>b2</sup>: *forlorenne*; II. 92<sup>a</sup>: *forðræstne*; II. 280<sup>a</sup>: *gebrædne*; II. 252<sup>a</sup>: *gecigedne*; II. 120<sup>a2</sup>: *geendebyrðne*; I. 210<sup>a</sup>: *gefreatewodne*; I. 330<sup>b</sup>: *geglencgedne*; II. 416<sup>b2</sup>: *gehæftne*; *gescrydne*: II. 168<sup>a2</sup>, 500<sup>b</sup>.

ASF. (2):—II. 182<sup>b2</sup>: se halga wer hæfde ane swustor, Scolastica *gehaten*; II. 124<sup>a</sup>: *afandode*.

ASN. (7):—II. 264<sup>a2</sup>: Ne ete ge of ðam lambe nan ðing hreaw, ne on wætere *gesoden*, ac *gebræd* to fyre. So *gesoden*: II. 278<sup>b1</sup>.—Other examples:—II. 260<sup>b2</sup>: *gedeced*; II. 198<sup>b</sup>: *gefadod*; I. 42<sup>a2</sup>: *gehalgod*; I. 134<sup>b</sup>: *gelacod*; I. 42<sup>a1</sup>: *gewemmed*.

APM. (3):—II. 516<sup>b1</sup>: oððe hwam betæhst ðu us nu *forlætene*?—Other examples:—II. 486<sup>b1</sup>: *gedrehte*; I. 568<sup>b1</sup>: *gescrydde*.

APF. (3):—I. 68<sup>a1 & 2</sup>: ge begeaton eow ðærsterfulle wununga mid dracum *afyllede*, and . . . mid . . . witum *afyllede*.—I. 506<sup>a</sup>: Ða gesawon hi ætforan ðære cyrcan norðdura, on ðam marmanstane, swilce mannes fotlæsta fæstlice on ðam stane *geðyde*. [Though Sweet and others give *fotlæst* as masculine only, it seems to be feminine here. See, too, I. 508<sup>a</sup>.]

APN. (1):—I. 218<sup>a2</sup>: se sacerð bletsian sceole palmtwigu and hi swa *geblotsode* ðam folce dælan.

## II. WITH AN OBJECT (5).

NSN. (1):—I. 594<sup>a2</sup>: ðu ceaf, ecum ontendnyssum *ge-gearcod*, gehyr me.

NPM. (1):—I. 544<sup>b3</sup>: deorum *geferlæhte*, to engelicum spræcum gewunode, on micclum wundrum scinende wæron.

NPN. (1):—II. 314<sup>b</sup>: manega sind beboda mannum *gesette* (or pred.?).

GSF. (1):—II. 292<sup>a</sup>: tihð ðurh miltsunge him *forgyfenre* mihte (or Abs. Dat.? See *Abs. Ptc. in A.-S.*, p. 11).

APM. (1):—II. 598<sup>b1</sup>: gescyld ðine ðeowan ðinum mægenðrymme *underðeodde*.

*Note: Latin Participles* occur as follows:—(1) untranslated: *credentes, persuadentes, secuti*, in Pref. to I.; (2) translated: *dicens (dicentes) = cwæðende*, I. 510<sup>b1</sup>, 520<sup>a</sup> = *befrinende* in I. 104<sup>a</sup>;—*raptum* = *ðe wæs gegripen*, II. 332<sup>b</sup>;—*circumdata* = *ymbscryd*, II. 586<sup>b</sup>.

## ÆLFRIC'S LIVES OF SAINTS (543).

## A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (335).

## I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (129).

NSM. (54):—442. 24: com se arwurða swyðun to sumum . . . smyðe on swefne *æteowiende* wurðlice geglencged.—xxviii. 6: Se casere wæs cene and reðe and deofolgild beeode dwollice *libbende*.—482. 182: he sona wearð hal beorhte *locigende* se ðe blind wæs.—Other examples:—478. 92: *blyssigende*; xxiii. B. 199<sup>1</sup>: *clypigende*; 156. 134: *drohtnigende*; xxiii. B. 640: *eftcyrrende*; 448. 100: *fægningende*;—*feallende*: 396. 222, xxviii. 114; 282. 5: *feohtend* [*sic*]; xxiii. B. 199<sup>2</sup>: *forðgangende*; 14. 77: *forðsteppende*; xxiii. B. 645: *geðrystlæcende*;—*hangi(g)ende*: 428. 212, 227, xxix. 254; xxiii. B. 733: *hawigende*; *heofende*: xxx. 180; xxiii. B. 366: *hlihhende*; 526. 617: *hlydende*; 466. 417: *hoppende*; xxiii. B. 726: *hreowsigende*; 174.

66: *licgende*; xxx. 47: *nytende*; xxiii. B. 154: *restende*; *rizi(g)ende*: 146. 474, 412. 480; 178. 158: *scinende*; xxiii. B. 153<sup>2</sup>: *sittende*; 452. 184: *siðigende*; xxiii. B. 667<sup>1</sup>: *smeagende*; xxiii. B. 664: *sorgigende*; xxiii. B. 164: *standende*; xxv. 156: *sweltende*; 76. 443: *teonde*; xxv. 14: *truwigende*; xxiii. B. 186<sup>2</sup>: *ðenigende*; xxx. 3<sup>2</sup>: *ðeonde*; xxiii. B. 231: *ðeowigende*; xxv. 472: *understandende*; xxx. 258: *utgangende*; 82. 550: *waciende*; xxiii. B. 162: *wendende*; *wepende*: 158. 199, 510. 371, xxiii. B. 191, xxx. 327; *wundrigende*: 518. 513, 534. 745; *wuni-gende*: 12. 33, 78. 494<sup>1</sup>, 336. 1, 470. 472<sup>1</sup>.

NSF. (37):—xxiii. B. 431: ic cwæð to hire geornlice and unforbugendlice *behealdende* and cweðende.—xxiii. B. 472: mine cneowa gebigde beforan ðam halgan andwritan ðysum wordum *biddende*.—212. 34: Heo aras ða *bifigende* for ðære beorhtan gesihðe (or pred.?). So: xxiii. B. 461.—Other examples:—192. 378: *blissigende*; *cweðende* (*cwæðende*): xxiii. B. 264<sup>1</sup>, 636, 696; xxiii. B. 668<sup>1</sup>: *eflcyrrende*; 196. 16<sup>2</sup>: *egsigende*; 434. 42: *fæstende*; xxiii. B. 510: *fleonde*; *gangende*: xxiii. B. 685, xxvi. 219; xxiii. B. 511<sup>2</sup>: *gehihtende*; xxiii. B. 702: *geomrigende*; xxiii. B. 274: *hangigende*; xxiii. B. 486: *hawigende*; *heofende*: xxiii. B. 428, 721; xxiii. B. 544: *hreafigende*; xxiii. B. 334: *licgende*; xxiii. B. 701: *locigende*; 196. 16<sup>1</sup>: *olecende*; *scinende*: 250. 197, xxvii. 117; xxiii. 548: *sorgigende*; xxiii. B. 283: *syrwiende*; xxiii. B. 457: *ðrystlæcende*; *wepende*: xxiii. B. 485, 494, 496, 541, 546, 720; *wuni(g)ende*: 20. 177<sup>2</sup>, 38. 230.<sup>1</sup>

NSN. (5):—78. 468: wunode an mæden mærllice *drohtnigende* geond feowertig geare fec fægre gehealden.—Other examples:—xxvi. 159: *feallende*; 88. 652: *flitende*; 184. 242: *grymetende*; 44. 327: *wunigende*.

NPM. (17):—98. 154: Ða eoden ða hæðengyldan into heora temple *clypigende* hlude to ðam leasan gode.—226. 110: ða clypodon ðær ðry weras *cnucigende* æt ðæm geate.—Other examples:—438. 99: *blyssigende*; 514. 445: *dreori-*

*gende*; 192. 379: *drohtniende*; xxiii. B. 115: *gereordende*; 110. 338<sup>1</sup>: *gliitniende*; 240. 18: *libbende*; *licgende*: 54. 62, xxv. 496; xxv. 513: *ridende*; 326. 83: *sprecende*; xxv. 779: *standende*; 326. 100: *ðancigende*; 94. 77: *ðeonde*; xxvi. 186: *wundrigende*; 70. 330: *wunigende*.

NPN. (4):—224. 86<sup>1 & 2</sup>: *binnan ðam wæron ealle cuce nytenu creopende and gangande* (or pred.?).—Other examples:—xxvii. 39: *dynigende*; xxiv. 53: *grymetende*.

DSM. (2):—14. 79: *Nis nanum menn on . . . life libbendum nanes ðinges swa mycel neod*.—xxiii. B. 673: *Ðus mid tearum biddende, him eft oðer geðanc on befeoll ðus cweðende*. [I omit *he* after *Ðus*, as does Skeat's "B."]

DSF. (3):—212. 40: *forgif me ða to clænnysse to criste farendre*.—xxiii. B. 752: *geic eac gebiddan ðeahhwæðere for me of ðyssere worulde hleorende on ðam monðe etc.*;—36. 185: *licgendre*.

ASM. (2):—78. 489: *gelædde hine on mergen forð swiðe fægres hiwes buton ælcum womme and wel sprecande*;—78. 481<sup>2</sup>: *unsprecende*.

ASF. (2):—334. 216: *Se sang geswutelað ða halgan ðrynnysse on anre godcundnysse æfre wunigende*; *ib.* xxix. 5 (?).

APM. (3):—388. 80: *se cyning sende swyðe fela ærendracan to . . . eardum embe ðe axiende*.—Other examples:—xxx. 429: *gebiddende* (or pred.?); 32. 130: *licgende*.

## II. WITH AN OBJECT (206).

NSM. (114):—xxvi. 137<sup>1 & 2</sup>: *he ðærbinnan wunode godes lof arærende and gerihtlæcende ðæt folc*.—xxiii. B. 96: *ðas weorc Zosimus behealdende hine sylfne geornlice to fulfremednysse aðened[e] gemang ðam emnwyrhtum*. So: xxx. 233.—60. 166: [he] *com to basilie biddende fulluhtes*.—62. 193: *Ða asende se ealdorman sona to basilie, biddende earmlice ðæt etc.*—78. 487: *ac se bisceop . . . wacode ealle ða niht mid ðam wædlian hreoffian, biddende ðone hælend*

ðæt he etc.—410. 443: Ða . . . mannases . . . to ðam ælmihtigan clypode, *biddende* miltsunge ealra his mandæda. Other instances of *biddende*: 66. 278, 106. 278, 122. 115, 224. 69, 312. 80, 314. 109, 316. 135, 420. 95, 448. 103, 458. 273, xxiii. B. 719, xxv. 487, xxvii. 212, xxix. 56.—96. 91: he him asende ðisne frofer ðus *cwæðende* etc. So *cwæðende* (*cwæðende*): 22. 190, 154. 106<sup>2</sup> (or pred.?), 182. 203<sup>2</sup>, 250. 212<sup>2</sup>, 314. 109, 364. 3, 378. 216, 386. 29, 408. 417, 444. 64; xxiii. B. 667<sup>2</sup>, 668<sup>2</sup>, 670, 674, xxiv. 103, xxvi. 100; xxx. 45, 98.—Other examples:—xxiii. B. 161: *ahæbbende*; xxiii. B. 672: *berende*; xxiii. B. 796<sup>2</sup>: *bletsigende*;—*bodigende*: 346. 135 (or pred.?), xxix. 114 (or pred.?), 144 (or pred.?):—xxiii. B. 153<sup>1</sup>: *brucende* (w. gen.); 366. 48: *bysmrigende*; *clypigende*: 180. 181 (or pred.?), 182. 203<sup>1</sup>, 250. 212<sup>1</sup>, 474. 49, xxiii. B. 601; 220. 33: *cunnigende*; xxiii. B. 638: *cyssende*; xxiii. B. 639<sup>2</sup>: *donde*; xxiii. B. 271: *foresettende*; 90. 666: *fremiende* (w. dat.); 64. 221: *gebysmriende*; *gehyrende*: xxiii. B. 587, xxx. 246; xxiii. B. 678: *geseonde*; *hæbbende*: 284. 10, xxiii. B. 78, 151, 669; *herigende*: 80. 523, 156. 139, 222. 35, xxiii. B. 796<sup>3</sup>, xxix. 296 (or pred.?): xxx. 179: *hopiende* (w. gen.); 154. 106<sup>1</sup>: *hrymende* (or pred.?): xxiii. B. 292: *hyrende*; xxiii. B. 689: *hyrsumigende* (w. dat.); xxiii. B. 363: *ofergeotende*; xxiii. B. 185: *ofergetiligende*; xxx. 4: *oferhltifigende*; xxviii. 37: *offrigende*; 320. 5: *sawende*; *secgende*: 246. 135, 300. 242, 410. 422, 462. 331, xxv. 541<sup>1</sup>, xxvii. 190<sup>2</sup>; xxv. 541<sup>2</sup>: *seðende*; 28. 59: *singende*; xxvii. 190<sup>1</sup>: *sleande*; *smeagende*: xxiii. B. 280 (= *putans*), xxvii. 137; *tihtende*: 84. 574, 96. 103, 306. 313; xxiii. B. 680: *tweonigende*; *ðanci(g)ende* (w. gen. & dat.): 28. 75, xxvii. 102; *ðeowigende* (w. dat.): 330. 152, 486. 251; 82. 538: *ðingiende* (w. dat.); xxiii. B. 186<sup>1</sup>: *understandende*; *wilnigende* (w. gen.): 220. 28, xxvi. 56; *wuldrigende*: xxiii. B. 639<sup>1</sup>, 679, 796<sup>1</sup>, xxvii. 217; *wundriende* (w. gen.): 54. 77, 56. 98; *wurðigende*: xxvii. 105, xxix. 232; *wyrcende*: 78. 494<sup>2</sup>, 470. 472<sup>2</sup>.

NSF. (36):—206. 178: *arn seo burhwaru endemes to ðam arleasan aẏende mid gehlyde etc.*—Other examples:—XXIII. B. 538: *adreogende*; XXIII. B. 511<sup>1</sup>: *anbidigende*; XXIII. B. 398: *beswicende*; *biddende* (w. ac. or w. gen.): 82. 533, 554; 178. 154, 180. 200, 182. 224, XXIII. B. 560; *clypi-(g)ende*: 80. 501, 210. 25, 224. 87, 92; 226. 101, 332. 191 (*clypiende stemn* = *vox clamantis*), XXIII. B. 487; *cnyssende*: XXIII. B. 542, 549; *cweðende* (*cwæðende*): 82. 533; XXIII. B. 282, 432, 454, 489, 591; XXX. 241, 343, 444; XXIII. B. 319: *forhærende*; XXIII. B. 397: *gegadrigende*; XXIII. B. 597: *halsigende*; XXIII. B. 521: *notigende*; XXIII. B. 581: *smeagende*; XXIII. B. 400: *teonde*; XXIII. B. 495: *townriðende*; XXIII. B. 426: *ðencende*.

NSN. (5):—XXIII. B. 595: *ac godes word is cucu and scearp, innan lærende* ðis mennisce andgyt.—Other examples:—*biddende*: 60. 171, XXV. 716; XXIII. B. 324: *cweðende*; XXIII. B. 287: *hæbbende* (= *reducens*).

NPM. (44):—472. 9: *gebugon to fulluhte behreowsigende heora synna.*—Other examples:—*biddende* (w. g. or ac.): 46. 357(?), 70. 334, 138. 352, 240. 40, 242. 75, 400. 258, 448. 121, 452. 188; XXV. 336, 768; XXIX. 172; XXVI. 79: *bodigende*; 136. 305: *clypigende*; *cweðende*: XXX. 140, 281, 425; XXIX. 192: *cyðende*; XXVI. 238: *fecceude*; XXVIII. 10: *folgiende* (w. dat.); XXIII. B. 139: *gefyllende*; *geseonde*: XXIII. B. 377, XXX. 184; 148. 24: *halsigende*; *heri[g]ende*: 70. 349 (or pred.), 102. 222, 110. 338,<sup>2</sup> 138. 351, 142. 403; *mærsigende*: 26. 37, 230. 162, 242. 51 (or pred.); XXV. 495: *sceotiende*; 54. 56: *secende* (or pred.); *secgende*: 146. 458, XXV. 121; *ðanci(g)ende* (w. dat. & gen.): 114. 410, 132. 249, 438. 85, 460. 322, 478. 96, XXV. 453; 80. 526: *wuldrigende*; 184. 249: *wurðigende*.

NP. F. or M. (1):—224. 66: *wydewan and ðearfan . . . æteowigende*.

GSF. (1):—XXIII. B. 426: *ða onhran soðlice min mod and ða eagan minre heortan hælo andgit mid me sylfre*

*ðencende* ðæt me ðone ingang belucen ða onfeormeganda (*sic*) minra misdæda (but, as is evident, the text is very corrupt).

DSM. (3):—XXIII. B. 246: Ða forgeaf heo Zosime *and-swarigende* Amen. [The text seems corrupt. Skeat translates: "Then she gave Zosimus [her blessing, he] answering 'Amen.'"]—XXIII. B. 674: Ðus mid tearum biddende, him eft oðer geðanc on befeoll, ðus *cweðende*. [I here follow Skeat's "B" and omit *he* after Ðus.]—82. 540: Se wyle ðe gehyran me *ðingiende* to him.

ASM. (2):—480. 143: het se foresæda dema gelædan ðone halgan on heardre racenteage feorr on wræcsið *ferigende* on scipe.—XXX. 411: se casere . . . het hine ungyrdan and bewæpnian and beforan his ansyne ætstandan mid his wife and his cildum swilce *ofergægendne* his hlafordes bebod.

#### B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (208).

##### I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (205).

NSM. (87):—14. 76<sup>1&2</sup>: se halga gast is æfre of him bam, na *acenned* ac forðsteppende. So *acenned* in 12. 34, 36.—114. 428: Ða fleah martianus for nean *adyd*.—206. 180: Ða fleah quintianus *afyrht* for ðam gehlyde. So: 348. 166.—Other examples:—386. 48: *afunden*; *afylled*: 194. 424, 314. 125, 330. 153, 330. 157; 466. 420: *ahred*; *asend*: 48. 413, 396. 207, XXIV. 140; XXVI. 173: *asmiðod*; XXX. 3<sup>1</sup>: *æðelboren*; 84. 593: *awend*; 158. 174: *awreht*; XXIII. B. 235: *belocen*; XXV. 782: *beswungen*; XXXI. 36: *betæht*; 428. 228: *fordemed*; XXV. 498: *fornumen*; 446. 96: *gebiced*; 394. 179: *gebolgen*; *gebyld*: 58. 142, XXIX. 143; *geci(ε)ged*: 238. 10, XXVI. 9; XXX. 234: *gedrefed*: XXIII. B. 179: *gefremed*; 422. 126: *gefullod*; 150. 40: *gefultumod*; 456. 238: *geglencged*; 462. 336: *gehæled*; *gehaten*, "called, named:" 28. 58, 54. 63, 84. 567, 136. 322, 154. 126, 186. 296, 398. 228, 408. 389, 426. 196, 436. 62, 472. 14, 476. 72, XXIV. 69; XXV. 7, 298, 594, 749; XXVI. 2, 120, 257; XXVII. 22, 47; 126. 159: *gehaten*, "summoned;" 446. 95: *ge-*

*hoferod*; xxix. 81: *gelæred*; 96. 99: *gelaðod*; *gelyfed*: 422. 125; xxvi. 3, 8; xxvii. 46; xxiii. B. 706: *gereht*; 14. 63<sup>1</sup>: *gesceapen*; 162. 247: *gescryd*; xxiii. B. 234: *gewæced*; 66. 273: *gewæpnod*; xxiii. B. 218: *gewend*; 14. 63<sup>2</sup>: *geworht*; 92. 22: *gewyssod*; xxv. 616: *geyrsod*; 532. 718: *ofdræd*; xxiii. B. 322: *ofergoten*; xxix. 64: *ofwundrod*; 208. 219: *onæled*; 12. 16<sup>1</sup>: *unbegunnen*; 222. 45: *unbunden*; *uncwð*: 66. 272, 116. 17; *ungeendod* (*ungeændod*): 12. 16<sup>2</sup>, 268. 103; xxxi. 42: *ungewemmed*.

NSF. (14):—180. 180: *arn seo burhwaru ablycged ðider*.—xxiii. B. 427: *Ða ongan ic biterlice wepan and swiðe gedrefed mine breost cnyssan*.—xxiii. B. 524: *Heo ða gedrefedu him andswarode*.—420. 108: *Ða wæs ðær gehende ðam halgan wære an myrige dun mid wyrtum amet*.—Other examples:—20. 177<sup>1</sup>: *befangen*; xxiii. B. 477: *forðoht*; 222. 55: *geciged*; xxiii. B. 238: *gefremed*; 222. 56: *genglencged*; 386. 50<sup>1</sup>: *gehaten*; 222. 54: *gelyfed*; 386. 50<sup>2</sup>: *gemodod*; xxiii. B. 264<sup>2</sup>: *gewend*; 38. 230<sup>2</sup>: *uncwð*.

NSN. (15):—78. 469: *wunode an mæden mærllice drohtnigende geond feowertig geare fec fægre gehealden*.—298. 229: *ðæt oðer folc fleah afyrht for heora hreame*.—Other examples:—xxvi. 183: *astreht*; xxv. 567: *befangen*; 236. 250: *fulfremed*; xxvi. 214: *gebrocod*; xxiii. B. 749: *gewcwen*; 32. 134: *gecyged*; *gehaten*: 44. 327, 170. 7<sup>1</sup>, 236. 249; *gelyfed*: 170. 7<sup>2</sup>, 194. 2; 30. 94: *uncwð*; xxiii. B. 285: *ymbseald*.

NPM. (37):—180. 167: *ac hi . . . ablycgede cyrdon to heora . . . hlaforde*.—468. 437: *ðeah ðe ða Iudeiscan ðurh deofol beswicene nallon gelyfan*.—Other examples:—*afyllede*: 126. 168, xxviii. 60; *afyrhte*: 166. 317, xxv. 611, xxvi. 231, xxix. 305; 54. 53: *alysde*; 116. 25: *æðelborene*; xxvi. 93: *cumene*; *fornumene*: 58. 138 (or pred.?), 204. 148, 326. 96; 126. 167: *geborene*; 342. 73: *gebundene*; *gebylde*: xxv. 488, xxvii. 149; 208. 216: *geegsode*; xxv. 339: *gehyrte*; 318. 172: *geleofede*; *gelyff(e)de*: xxiv. 2, xxv. 109, xxviii. 15; 184. 245: *gemartyrode*; xxv. 558:



*gelemode*; 460. 319: *geuntrumode*; *gewæpnode*: 190. 359, xxv. 333; xxv. 559: *gewenode*; *geworhte*: 386. 38, 408. 386; 506. 300: *ofdrædde*; 298. 228: *ofhrorene*; xxv. 497: *ofslagene*; 54. 58: *onbryrde*; xxiii. B. 571: *totorene* (but the passage is corrupt).

NPF. (1):—xxv. 813: on ðysre worulde synd ðreo ende-byrdnysse on annysse *gesette*; ðæt synd etc.

DSM. (7):—462. 351: oððæt hi becomon to sumum ænlicum felda fægre *geblowen*.—xxv. 757: sum leogere . . . sæde ðam ealdormenn Apollonius *geciged*.—140. 368: Nicostratus . . . wearð . . . toforan ðam deman gebroht, fabianus *gehaten*. So *gehaten*: 224. 79, 402. 317, xxv. 331, xxvi. 121.

DSF. (11):—xxiii. B. 438: forðon witodlice genoh rihtlic is me swa *besmitenre* fram ðinre clænan ungewemmednysse beon ascirod.—xxiii. B. 598: Nu ic ðe . . . andbidde . . . ðæt ðu for me earmlicre *forlegenre* gebidde.—54. 83: gewendon to anre widgyllan byrig, Antiochia *geciged*. So *geciged*: 146. 462.—54. 66: ferde to ðære [flowendan] ea iordanis *gehaten*. So *gehaten*: 68. 325, 184. 264, 238. 11, xxv. 413, xxix. 4, 146.

DSN. (2):—196. 10: betæhte hi anum fulum wife Afrodosia *geciged*.—xxxi. 11: Martinus . . . wæs geboren on ðam fæstene Sabaria *gehaten*.

DS. M. or N. (1):—172. 36: He geglængde me mid orle of golde *awefen*.

ASM. (20):—44. 350<sup>1 & 2</sup>: Basilla hæfde enne hæðene wogere, pompeius *gecyged*, swiðe æðelboren. So *geciged*: xxix. 213.—312. 68: A. . . genam ænne mycelne bollan mid bealuwe *afylled*.—xxvii. 11: forlet ða ænne dæl on ðære ylcan byrig ðe Crist on ðrowode, swa swa us cyðað gewritu, mid seolfre *bewunden*.—Other examples:—200. 75: *gebigedne* (or pred. ?); xxiii. B. 661: *gefylledne*; *gehaten*: 28. 67, 104. 230, 124. 125, 194. 409, 222. 42, 302. 277, 408. 396, xxv. 761, xxvi. 53, xxix. 204, 214; 78. 481<sup>1</sup>: *toswollen*; 78. 482: *unafunden*.

ASF. (4):—xxviii. 36 : wið ane litle burh Octodorum *gehaten*. So *gehaten*: xxxi. 59.—xxiii. B. 500 : ic becom to sanctes iohannes cyrcan ðæs fulwihteres wið iordanen *gesette*.—436. 80 : *geworht*.

ASN. (2):—92. 26 : Ða fundon his magas sum æðelboren mæden basilissa *gehaten*; 132. 258 : *untobrocen*.

APM. (1):—246. 146 : *unscrydde*.

APF. (2):—xxiii. B. 128 : sum [bær] beana mid wætere *ofgotene*; *ib*. xxiii. B. 663.

APN. (1):—24. 225 : ealle lichamlicra ðinga hiw heo mæg on hyre sylfre gehiwan, and swa *gehiwode* on hyre mode gehealden.

## II. WITH AN OBJECT (3).

NSN. (1):—288. 71 : forðan ðe heo gebedhus is, gode *gehalgod*.

ASM. (1):—xxiii. B. 676 : Eala me ungesæligan swa rihtwislicre gesihðe *afremdad* me.

ASF. (1):—xxiii. B. 442 : gefultuma me nu anegre ælces fylstes *bedæled* (MS. G : *bedælede*).

*Note*: *Latin Participles* occur in 332. 191 (*vox clamantis* = *clypiende stemn*), 338. 33 (*vir videns deum* = *Ðæt is on Engliscra spræce : se wer ðe god gesihð*), xxiii. B. 280 (*putans* = *smeagende*), xxiii. B. 287 (*reducens* = *hæbbende*).

## ÆLFRIC'S DE VETERI ET DE NOVO TESTAMENTO (41).

### A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (15).

#### I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (5).

NSM. (4):—18. 32 : he *bifiende* feoll to i. fotum (or pred.?).—20. 24 : *Bellatores* . . . ure burga healdað . . . *feohtende* mid wæmnum; *libbende* (*lybbende*): 2. 26, 12. 40.

DPM. (1):—5. 34 : [mete] him ælce dæg com edniwe of heofenum feowertig wintra fyrst on ðam westene *farende*.

## II. WITH AN OBJECT (10).

NSM. (7):—18. 33<sup>2</sup>: he . . . feoll to I. fotum . . . *biddende* miltsunge.—Other examples:—16. 32: *bodigende* (or pred.?); 16. 10: *cweðende*; 16. 30<sup>2</sup>: *lærende*; 20. 10: *secgende*; *wyr-cende* (*wircende*): 15. 23, 16. 30<sup>1</sup>.

NPM. (3):—19. 45: ðær ðær hig blissiað *andbidiende* git ðæs ecan lifes; *heriende*: 5. 28, 8. 27.

## B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (26).

## I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (26).

NSM. (13):—2. 9, 10: Her is seo halige ðrinnis on ðisum ðrim mannum . . . se . . . fæder of nanum oðrum *gecumen*, and se micla wisdom of ðam wisan fæder æfre . . . *acenned*.—Other examples:—3. 25: *adrenced*; 13. 40: *ahangen*; 3. 2: *awend*; 2. 44: *gefæstnod*; *gehaten*: 9. 20, 11. 4; 11. 5: *gelyfed*; 17. 24: *gestrangod*; 12. 34: *geðogen*; 18. 33<sup>1</sup>: *ofergoten*; 18. 34: *ofsceamod*.

NPM. (3):—20. 20: *Laboratores* sind yrðlingas and æhte men to ðam anum *betæhte* etc. So: 20. 22.

NPF. (2):—14. 12: ðæt syndon ðreo bec mid lufe *afyllede* folce to lare; 11. 21: *gehatene*.

DSM. (1):—16. 24: binnan anum i goðe feor on wræcsiðe, Pathmos *gehaten*.

ASM. (4):—3. 23: se acwealde his broðor Abel *gehaten* unscildigne mannan. So *gehaten* = acc. sing. masc.: 7. 18, 8. 20, 11. 9.

ASF. (1):—15. 44: he awrat ða boc on his wræcsiðe Apocalipsis *gehaten*.

ASN. (2):—7. 34<sup>1 & 2</sup>: He arærde . . . ðæt . . . tempel . . . swa fægere *getimbrod* and swa fæste *getrymmed*; 7. 35: *oferworht*.

## II. WITH AN OBJECT (0).

No example.

## ÆLFRIC'S HEPTATEUCH (99).

## A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (61).

## I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (25).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (15):—

NSM. (9):—Judges 4. 20: gif her ænig man cume *acsi-gende* embe me = cum venerit aliquis *interrogans* te (or pred.?).—Gen. 19. 14: Ða wæs him geðuht, swilce he *gamnigende* spræce = Et visus est eis quasi *ludens* loqui.—Other examples:—*ingangende* = *ingrediens*: Deut. 28. 6<sup>1</sup>, 19<sup>1</sup>; Num. 22. 34: *nitende* = *nesciens*; Gen. 15. 17: *smociende* = *fumans* (or attrib.); Num. 16. 48: *standende* = *stans*; *utgangende* = *egrediens*: Deut. 28. 6<sup>2</sup>, 19<sup>2</sup>.

NSN. (2):—Ex. 2. 23: Israela bearn clypode *geomriende* for ðam weorcum = *ingemiscentes filii Israel propter opera vociferati sunt*; Job. 1. 19: *hreosende* = *corruens*.

NPM. (3):—Judges 15. 14: urnon him togeanes ealle *hlydende* = Et cum Philisthiim *vociferantes* occurrissent ei (or pred.?).—Other examples:—Ex. 1. 7<sup>1</sup>: *spryttende* = *germinantes*; Num. 16. 18: *standende* = *stantes*.

NPN. (1):—Gen. 8. 3: Ða wæteru ða gecirdon of ðære eorðan ongean *farende* = *Reversæque sunt aquæ de terra euntes et redeuntes*.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which finite verb is usually subordinate or is in immediate connection with an appositive participle (5):—

NSM. (1):—Gen. 22. 3: Abraham ða aras on ðære ylcan nihte and ferde mid twam cnapum to ðam fyrlnum lande and Isaac samod on assum *ridende* = *Igitur Abraham de nocte consurgens stravit asinum suum, ducens secum duos juvenes et Isaac filium suum abiit in locum*.

NPM. (4):—Num. 14. 45: and hig micclum slogon and *ehtende* adrifon = et percutiens eos atque occidens *persecutus est* eos.—Other examples:—Num. 20. 30: beweopon *geomeri-*

*ende* = *flevit* (there is an ap. ptc. in the sentence); Josh. 8. 16: hrymdon *ridende* = *vociferantes persecuti sunt eos*; Job 2. 12<sup>2</sup>: hrymdon *wepende* = *exclamantes ploraverunt*.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (1):—

NSM. (1):—Gen. 24. 63: He eode ut on ðæt land ðen-  
*cende* = *Et egressus fuerat ad meditandum in agro*.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle has no exact Latin correspondence (4):—

NSM. (2):—Judges 4. 22: *acsigend* (*sic*: cf. Judges 4. 20, where *acsigende* = *interrogans*) (or pred. ?); Gen. 37. 35: *wepende* (cf. Gen. 37. 34, in which *lugens* occurs).

NPM. (2):—Job 2. 12<sup>1</sup>: *cumende*; Josh. 7. 6: *licende*.

## II. WITH AN OBJECT (36).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (25):—

NSM. (12):—Gen. 1. 22: And bletsode hig, ðus *cweðende* = *Benedixitque eis dicens*. So *cweðende* = *dicens*: Gen. 2. 16, 8. 15, 17. 17; Ex. 3. 16, 5. 6; Deut. 32. 48, 34. 4.—Other examples:—Job 1. 8<sup>2</sup>: *yfel forbugende* = *recedens a malo*; Job 1. 8<sup>1</sup>: *ondrædende* = *timens*; Job (Exposition), p. 266, l. 20: *secende* = *quærens* (for Latin cf. I. Peter 5. 8); Gen. 2. 6: *wætriende* = *irrigans*.

NSF. (5):—Gen. 18. 12: (Sarrah) hloh digellice, ðus *cweðende* = *Quæ risit occulte, dicens*. So *cweðende* = *dicens*: Gen. 15. 4; Num. 16. 41.—Other examples:—Num. 10. 33: *sceawiende* = *providens*; *secgende* = *dicens*: Gen. 15. 1.

NSN. (1):—Judges 6. 7: Swa Israela folc ða earmlice clipode to ðam . . . gode, his helpes *biddende* = *Et clamavit Israel ad dominum, postulans auxilium*.

NPM. (1):—Gen. 3. 5: ge beoð ðonne englum gelice *witende* ægðer ge god ge yfel = *et eritis sicut dii, scientes bonum et malum*.

ASF. (1):—Gen. 1. 12<sup>1</sup>: seo eorðe forð ateah growende wırte and sæd *berende* be hire cinne = protulit terra herbam virentem et *facientem* semen juxta genus suum.

ASN. (4):—Gen. 1. 11<sup>1&2</sup>: Spritte seo eorðe growende gærs and sæd *wircende* and æppebære treow wæstm *wircende* æfter his cinne = Germinet terra herbam virentem et *facientem* semen et lignum pomiferum *faciens* fructum juxta genus suum; *ib.* Gen. 1. 12<sup>2</sup>; Gen. 1. 12<sup>3</sup>: hæbbende = *habens*.

APF. (1):—Gen. 1. 29: ic forgeaf eow eall gærs and wyrta sæd *berende* ofer eorðan = dedi vobis omnem herbam *afferentem* semen super terram.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which finite verb is usually either subordinate or is in immediate connection with an appositive participle (3):—

NSM. (1):—Deut. 4. 45: . . . æ, ðe Moises foresette and laga and domas, ðus *cweðende* = . . . lex, quam proposuit M., et . . . judicia quae *locutus est*.

NSF. (1):—Josh. 10. 6: Ða sende seo burhwaru . . . to Iosue *biddende* ðæt etc. = miserunt ad Iosue et *dixerunt* ei.

ASN. (1):—Deut. 11. 25: Ge . . . gehirdon his word, ðus *cweðende* = . . . et *locutus est* vobis.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle has no exact Latin correspondence (8):—

NSM. (2):—Judges (Epilogue), p. 264, l. 14: *gewilniende*; Judges 5. 32 (Exposition): *heriende*.

NPM. (6):—Judges 5. 32 (Exposition): *ahebbende*; *biddende*: Judges, Preface, l. 10, 3. 15, 4. 3; Judges, Epilogue, p. 265, l. 15: *ðanciende*; Judges, Epilogue, p. 265, l. 13: *wilniende*.

## B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (38).

### I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (38).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (11):—

NPM. (3):—Num. 15. 44: Hig swa ðeah *ablende* beotlice astigon = At illi *contenebrati* ascenderunt.—Other examples :—Ex. 1. 7<sup>2</sup>: *gestrangode* = *roborati*; Num. 16. 33: *ofhrorene* = *operti*.

ASM. (3):—Gen. 22. 13: geseah ðær anne ramm betwux ðam bremelum be ðam hornum *gehæft* = *viditque* . . . arietem inter vepres *hærentem* cornibus (or pred.?).—Other examples :—Ex. 9. 24: hagol wið fyr *gemenged* = *mista*; Ex. 29. 23: *gesprengedne* = *conspersæ*.

ASN. (2):—Ex. 12. 8: And eton ealle ðæt flæsc on fyre *gebrædd* = Et edent carnes nocte illa *assas igni*:—Ex. 12. 9: *gesoden* = *coctum aqua*.

APM. (1):—Levit. 2. 4: Bring clæne ofenbacene hlafas mid ele *geasmirede* = panes *conspersos oleo*.

APN. (2):—Ex. 31. 18: He sealde Moise twa stænene wexbreda mid godes handa *agrafene* = duas tabulas lapideas *scriptas digito dei*; Gen. 41. 6: *forseruncene* = *percussae*.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which finite verb is usually subordinate or is in immediate connection with an appositive participle (1):—

NSN. (1):—Judges 16. 4: Hine beswac swa ðeah siððan an wif, Dalila *gehaten* = Post hæc amavit mulierem, *quæ vocabatur* Dalila.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (2):—

NPM. (2):—Ex. 12. 19<sup>1&2</sup>: ne ete ge nan ðing onhafenes, ne utan *cymene* ne innan lande *geborene* = tam *de advenis* quam *de indigenis* terrae.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin substantive in the ablative (1):—

NSM. (1):—Judges 13. 2: An man wæs eardigende on Israhela ðeode, Manue *gehaten* = Erat autem quidam vir *nomine* Manue.

5. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (1):—

NPM. (1):—Ex. 4. 31: and hig gebædon hig to gode nywel *astrehte* on eorðan = et *proni* adoraverunt.

6. An A.-S. appositive participle has no exact Latin correspondence (22):—

NSM. (5):—Num. 22. 27: *afirht* (or pred. ?); Judges 16. 5: *bepæht*; Judges 4. 14: *gebyld*; Judges 4. 17: *geegsod*; Judges (Epilogue), p. 265, l. 1: *gehaten*.

NSF. (1):—Gen. 21. 6: *ofwundrod*.

NSN. (1):—Num. 16. 34: *afirht*.

NPM. (3):—Gen. 14. 10: *afirhte*; Gen. 19. 1: *asende*; Judges 6. 2: *gewæhte*.

DSM. (4):—Judges 6. 1: ðam . . . leodscipe Madian *geweden*; Judges 4. 2: sumum . . . cininge Iabin *gehaten*; Judges 16. 23: heora gode, Dagon *gehaten*; Judges (Epilogue), p. 264, l. 32: on ðam miclan ea, Eufrates *gehaten*.

DSF. (1):—Judges 16. 1: to anre birig, Gaza *gehaten*.

DPM. (1):—Judges 16. 7: mid seofon rapum of sinum *geworhte*.

ASM. (6):—Josh. 10. 33: ðone oðerne kyning Hiram *gehaten*. So: Judges 4. 6, 4. 7, 6. 14, 11. 1.—Gen. 19. 24: god sende . . . renscur mid sweffe *gemenegeð*.

## II. WITH AN OBJECT (0).

No example.

### ANGLO-SAXON HOMILIES AND LIVES OF SAINTS, I. (89).

#### A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (49).

##### I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (25).

NSM. (5):—3. 105: Be ðam sang se witega ðisum wordum *cweðende*. So: 4. 41.—Other examples:—*lybbende*: 1. 87, 9. 195; 3. 78: *secgende* ðisum wordum.



NSF. (2):—1. 24: *Deos is seo halige ðrynnys, ðe ealle ðing gesceop, on anre godcundnysse æfre wunigende*.—So: 3. 130.

NSN. (2):—3. 437: *Sum . . . wif . . . his fet aðwoh and gelome hi cyste, liegende æt his fotum*; 9. 80: *wunigende*.

NPM. (11):—6. 113: . . . gif we her nu swincað, *feohtende* mid geleafan wið leahtras.—Other examples:—9. 357: *hlydende*; *libbende*: 7. 6, 9. 60; 9. 61: *swyltende*; *truwigende*: 9. 88, 9. 350<sup>2</sup>; *wunigende*: 3. 132, 3. 527, 6. 66, 9. 133.

NPN. (1):—3. 324: *ðeah ðe hi [= mædenu] clæne beon on mægðhade lybbende*.

NP. M. or F. (1):—3. 12: *lybbende*.

DPM. (1):—7. 151: [mete] *heom ælce dæge com edniwe of heofenum xl wintra fyrst on ðam wæstene farende*.

ASM. (1):—9. 330: *ac . . . he asende me ongean on his sige blissigende and on eowre alysednysse*.

APM. (1):—9. 103: *god hi ða gelædde . . . ealle ofer ða . . . sæ, siðigende be ðam grunde*.

## II. WITH AN OBJECT (24).

NSM. (4):—1. 304: *se . . . lareow lærde us ðus cweðende*.—Other examples:—4. 55: *secende*; *secgende*: 3. 181, 3. 531.

NSF. (3):—8. 176: *heo . . . fæste, biddende æt gode, ðæt etc.*—Other examples:—9. 318: *cweðende*; 9. 417: *ðeo-wigende* (w. dat.).

NSN. (2):—9. 111: *Ðæt godes folc ða eode upp be ðam grunde, herigende heora drihten*; 3. 479: *singende*.

NPM. (14):—5. 75: *reaferas urnon geond ða burh mete gehwær secende*. So: 9. 366.—Other examples:—9. 82: *abugende*; *biddende*: 9. 59, 9. 72; 9. 162: *cweðende*; 1. 90<sup>1</sup> (foot-note): *fyligende* (w. dat.); 7. 145: *herigende*; 1. 90<sup>2</sup> (foot-note): *lærende*; 2. 142: *strynende*; *ðeowigende* (w. dat.): 2. 185, 204, 220; 9. 451.

APM. (1):—2. 117: *Iohannes . . . geseah Crist standan and ðone clænan flocc mid him, hundteontig ðusenda and*

feower and feowertig ðusenda, swiðe hlude *singende* ðone heofonlican sang.

## B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (40).

### I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (40).

NSM. (13):—1. 67: he us alysde . . . mid his agenum deaðe, on rode *ahangen*.—Other examples:—7. 28: *awend*; *gehaten*: 5. 9; 8. 2, 78, 127; 9. 193; 8. 268: *gehathyrt*; 9. 194: *gelyfed*; 7. 23: *ifæstnod*; *ihaten*: 7. 214, 287; 7. 288: *ilyfed*.

NSF. (3):—9. 207: heo fæste symle buton on freolsdagum, mid hæran *gescryd* to hire lice æfre.—Other examples:—7. 61: *aðwogen*; 3. 27: *gesceapen*.

NSN. (4):—3. 349: Iacobes wif, Rachel *geciged*, twentig wintra wunode etc.—Other examples:—3. 334: *gehaten*; 8. 149: *tostenced*; 3. 95: *ungewemmed*.

NPM. (11):—1. 43, 44: hi forleton his hlafordscipe ealle swyðe unwislice, fram him *ascyrede* mid andan *afyllede*. So *afyllede*: 8. 110.—Other examples:—1. 81: *arærde*; 9. 58: *fornumene*; 9. 2: *gecweden*; 3. 293: *gelærede*; 3. 295: *gemartirode*; 3. 38: *ofslagene* (or pred. ?); 2. 213: *onbryrde*; 9. 69: *ymbtrymde*.

NPF. (1):—7. 302: Twa bec beoð isette . . . machabeorum *ihatene*.

DSM. (1):—3. 25: And eac his godcundnyss wæs on ðære menniscnyss to anum soðan Criste of hyre acenned, æfre *unbegunnen* on ðære godecundnyss.

DSF. (1):—2. 114: on his gastlican gesihðe, Apocalipsis *gehaten*.

DSN. (1):—3. 362: mid his wife, Elisabeth *genamod*.

ASM. (4):—3. 332: behet, ðæt hi habban sceoldon sunu, Isaac *gehaten*. So: 9. 46; *ihaten*: 7. 49, 292.

ASF. (1):—9. 9: towænde se cyning heora . . . burh, Hierusalem *gehaten*.

## II. WITH AN OBJECT (0).

No example.

ANGLO-SAXON HOMILIES AND LIVES  
OF SAINTS, II. (22).

## A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (16).

## I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (11).

NSM. (2):—15. 353: ic hit *unwillende* do; 10. 90: *scamiende*.

NSF. (6):—18. 25: swilce heo *dwellende* ðyder come. So: 18. 29.—Other examples:—10. 181: *geomriende*; *wepende*: 10. 100, 10. 180; 18. 32: *woperiende*.

NPF. (1):—15. 51: hire fostermoder hi het gan mid oðrum fæmnum on feld, sceap to hawienne, and hi swa dydo[n] *spinnende*.

APM. (2):—15. 242<sup>1&2</sup>: Sume ic *slæpende* beswac and sume eac *wacigende* = 19. 265: Et cum *dormiunt*, venio super eos et excito illos a somno.

## II. WITH AN OBJECT (5).

NSM. (4):—15. 52: Ða ferde Olibrius to Anthiochiam, *axiende* etc.; *cweðende*: 18. 57, 80, 109.

DSM. (1):—11. 16: *Audiens* ex ore meo sermonem meum, adnuntiabis eis ex me, non ex te. Ðæt is on urum geðeode: Of minum muðe *gehlystendum* [for *gehlystende* by attraction to *muðe*?] ðu bodast hym mine spræce of me, næs of ðe.

## B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (6).

## I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (5).

NSM. (1):—15. 12: wæs sum hæðen cyningc, Theodosius *gehaten*.

NSF. (1):—15. 44: heo cwæð: ic eom ðin ðeowa [*sic!*] clæna and *ungewæmmed*.

NSN. (1):—16. 55: hig hym dryncan sealdon, ðæt wæs wyn and eced *gemenged* togædere.

NPM. (1):—12. 45: hwilum willes, hwilum *geneadode* gewuniað of to drincanne.

ASF. (1):—15. 45: Ðe ic me betæce *ungewæmmode*.

## II. WITH AN OBJECT (1).

NSM. (1):—17. 23: ic eam of Grecane rice and ic of Iudean wæs, ðan Pontisscen Pilate *underðeodd*.

*Note: Latin Participles.*—Latin participles occur in 11. 16 (quoted under dative above), in 13. 13 (*sciens* = ða *wiste* se hælend), in 13. 59 (*sciens* = He *wiste*), and in 18. 68 (et *videns* filium etc. = no A.-S. equivalent). Again in no. 19, which is entirely in Latin and which is the basis, though not the literal equivalent, of no. 15 (Anglo-Saxon), about 55 appositive participles occur; but, as no one of these is translated by an appositive participle in Old English, it seems unnecessary to cite them.

## GOSPELS' (280).

### A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (237).

#### I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (115).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (107):—

NSM. (52):—L. 23. 5<sup>a</sup> & <sup>b</sup>: he astyrað ðis folc, *lærende* ðurh ealle iudeam *agynnende* of [galilea oð hyder] = *Commovet populum docens per universam Judeam, incipiens a Galilæa usque huc.*—Other examples:—L. 23. 14: *ahsiende* = *interrogans*; L. 24. 12<sup>a</sup>: *alutende* = *procumbens*; *andswari(g)ende* = *respondens*: Mat. 11. 25, 20. 13; Mk. 9. 12, 10. 24, 11. 22, 13. 5, 14. 48; *Luke*: 4. 12, 5. 5, 5. 22, 7. 40, 13. 2, 14.

5, 15. 29, 17. 17; Mk. 1. 35: *arise*nde = *surgens*; L. 5. 3<sup>a</sup>: *astigende* = *adscendens*; Mk. 7. 34: *behealdende* = *suspiciens*; L. 3. 18: *bodigende* = *exhortans*; Mk. 1. 7: *bugende* = *procumbens*; *clypiende* = *clamans*: Mk. 15. 39, L. 23. 46<sup>a</sup>; *ib.* = *exclamans*: Mk. 1. 26<sup>b</sup>; Mat. 12. 44: *cumende* = *veniens*; Mk. 9. 20: *fæmende* = *spumans*; Mat. 4. 9: *feallende* = *cadens*; *gangende* = *ambulans*: Mat. 14. 25 (or pred.?), Mk. 6. 48 (or pred.?): *ib.* = *transiens*, L. 12. 37; L. 15. 5: *geblissiende* = *gaudens*; Mk. 1. 31: *genealæcende* = *accedens*; *hrymende* = *clamans*: Mk. 5. 5 (or pred.?), 5. 7; *ib.* = *exclamans*: Mk. 9. 26<sup>a</sup>, L. 8. 28; *ingan(c)gende* = *ingressus*: Mk. 1. 21, L. 1. 28; *lærende* = *docens*: Mat. 4. 23, 9. 35<sup>a</sup>, Mk. 12. 35; L. 17. 24: *lyhtende* = *coruscans*; L. 5. 3<sup>b</sup>: *sittende* = *sedens*; Mk. 7. 33: *spærende* = *exspuens*; L. 4. 39: *standende* = *stans*; Mk. 15. 30: *stigende* = *descendens*; L. 1. 78: *upspringende* = *oriens*; *utgangende* = *egressus*: Mk. 1. 45, L. 4. 42.

NSF. (3):—L. 2. 38: And ðeos ðære tide *becumende* drihtne andette = Et hæc, ipsa hora *superveniens*, confitebatur Domino.—Other examples:—L. 2. 19: *smeagende* = *conferens*; L. 2. 37: *ðeowigende* = *serviens*.

NSN. (4):—Mk. 5. 33<sup>a & b</sup>: Ðæt wif ða *ondrædende* & *forhtigende* com & *astrehte* hi = Mulier vero *timens* et *tremens* . . . venit et procidit; *gangende* = *introiens*: Mk. 7. 15, 7. 18.

NPM. (30):—Mk. 15. 31: heahsacerdas *bysmriende* betwux ðam bocerum cwædon = sacerdotes *illudentes* . . . dicebant.—Other examples:—Mk. 7. 1: *cumende* = *venientes*; L. 22. 65: *dysigende* = *blasphemantes*; L. 2. 16: *efstende* = *festinantes*; Mk. 16. 20: *farende* = *profecti*; *gangende* = *intrans*tes, Mat. 2. 11; *ib.* = *incedentes*, L. 1. 6; *gehyrende* = *audientes*: Mat. 13. 13<sup>b</sup>, Mk. 4. 12<sup>b</sup>, L. 8. 10<sup>b</sup>; *geseonde* = *videntes*: Mk. 4. 12<sup>a</sup>, L. 8. 10<sup>a</sup>; Mk. 11. 24: *gyrnende* = *orantes*; Mat. 9. 27: *hrymynde* = *clamantes*; Mat. 12. 45: *ingangende* = *intrans*tes; Mat. 5. 11: *leogende* = *mentientes*; *lociende* = *videntes*: Mat. 13. 13<sup>a</sup>, 13. 14; L. 2. 48: *sari-gende* = *dolentes*; Mat. 27. 36: *sittende* = *sedentes*; Mat. 17.

3: *sprecende* = *loquentes*; Mat. 6. 5: *standende* = *stantes*; Mk. 6. 32: *stigende* = *adscendentes*; L. 5. 5: *swincende* = *laborantes*; *utgangende* (*utgangynde*) = *exeuntes*: Mat. 8. 28, 9. 31, Mk. 3. 6, 6. 12; L. 20. 26: *wundrigende* = *mirati*; L. 22. 44: *yrnende* = *decurrentis*.

NPN. (1):—Mat. 8. 32: hig [= *ða deoffla*] *ða utgangende* ferdon on *ða swin* = At illi *exeuntes* abierunt in porcos.

NDM. (1):—L. 24. 17: hwæt synt *ða spæca ðe gyt receað inc betwynan gangende?* = Qui sunt hi sermones quos confertis ad invicem *ambulantes?*

GPM. (1):—L. 18. 7: Soðlice ne deð God his gecorenra wrace *clypiendra* to him dæges & nihtes = Deus autem non faciet vindictam electorum suorum *clamantium* ad se die ac nocte.

GPN. (1):—L. 8. 32: And *ðar wæs micel heord swyna* on *ðam munte læsiendra* = Erat . . . grex porcorum . . . *pascentium* in monte.

DSN. (1):—Mat. 13. 47<sup>b</sup>: Eft is heofena rice gelic asendum nette on *ða sæ & of ælcum fisc-cynne gadrigendum* = Iterum simile est regnum cælorum *sagenæ missæ in mare, et ex omni genere piscium congreganti*.

DPM. (5):—L. 6. 17: And mid him *farendum* he stod on feldlice stowe = Et *descendens* cum illis stetit in loco campestri. [Or shall we emend *farendum* to *farende* in accordance with the Latin?—Other examples:—Mk. 9. 42: *gelyfendum* = *credentibus*; Mk. 16. 10<sup>a</sup>: *heofendum* = *lugentibus*; Mat. 11. 16: *sittendum* = *sedentibus*; Mk. 16. 10<sup>b</sup>: *wependum* = *flentibus*.

DPN. (2):—L. 7. 32<sup>a & b</sup>: Hi sint gelice cildum on stræte *sittendum & specendum* betwux him = Similes sunt pueris *sedentibus* in foro, et *loquentibus* ad invicem.

ASM. (4):—Mk. 15. 21: & genyddon sumne wegferendne simonem cireneum *cumende* of *ðam tune* . . . *ðæt he etc.* = Et angariaverunt prætereuntem quempiam, Simonem Cyrenæum *venientem* de villa etc.—Other examples:—J. 1. 9:

*cumendne* = *venientem*; L. 17. 7<sup>a</sup>: *eregendne* = *arantem*; Mat. 9. 2: *licgende* = *jacentem*.

ASN. (1):—L. 6. 38<sup>b</sup>: god gemet & full geheapod and *oferflowende* hig *syllað* = *mensuram, bonam . . . et superef-fluentem* dabunt.

APM. (1):—Mat. 4. 24: *yfeihæbbende* = *male habentes*.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which finite verb is usually subordinate or is in immediate connection with an appositive participle (2):—

NSM. (2):—Mk. 11. 17: & he ða *lærende* ðus *cwæð* = Et *docebat*, *dicens eis*.—Mat. 26. 27<sup>a</sup>: And he *genam* ðone *calic* ð*anciende* & *sealde* hym ðus *cweðende* = Et *accipiens calicem, gratias egit, et dedit illis, dicens*.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerund in the ablative (2):—

NSM. (2):—L. 15. 13: & forspilde ðar his æhta, *lybbende* on his gælsan = et ibi *dissipavit substantiam suam vivendo* *luxuriose*;—L. 12. 25: ð*encende* = *cogitando*.

4. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin prepositional phrase (1):—

NSM. (1):—Mk. 9. 24: *wepende* *cwæð* = *cum lacrymis* *aiebat*.

5. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin ablative absolute clause (1):—

NSM. (1):—L. 6. 20: Ða *cwæð* se *hælend* *beseonde* to his leorning-cnihtum = Et ipse *elevatis oculis* in *discipulos suos, dicebat*.

6. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (2):—

NSM. (1):—Mk. 5. 40: He . . . *ineode swigende* (Hat. MS.) ðar ðæt mæden wæs = Ipse . . . *ingreditur ubi etc.*

NSF. (1):—L. 2. 51: And his modor geheold ealle ðas word on hyre heortan *smeagende* = Et mater ejus *conservabat omnia verba in corde suo*. [Cf. L. 2. 19, where *smeagende* = *conferens*.]

## II. WITH AN OBJECT (122).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (117):—

NSM. (57):—Mk. 1. 41: & his hand aðenode & hine æthrinende [Hat. MS. æthrinede] & ðus cwæð = extendit manum suam, et *tangens* eum, ait illi.—Mat. 10. 5<sup>a</sup>: Ðas twelf se h. sende, him *bebeodende* = Hos duodecim misit J., *præcipiens* eis.—L. 3. 3: he com into eall iordanes ricæ *bodiende* dædbote fulluht & synna forgyfenesse = venit in omnem regionem Iordanis, *prædicans* baptismum pœnitentiæ in remissionem peccatorum (or pred.?). So *bodi(g)ende* = *prædicans* in: Mat. 9. 35<sup>b</sup>, Mk. 1. 14 (or pred. ?); = *evangelizans* in L. 8. 1<sup>b</sup> (or pred. ?).—Mat. 9. 18: & ge-eaðmedde hyne to him, ðus *cweðende* = et adorabat eum, *dicens*. So *cweðende* (*cweðynde*) = *dicens* in: Mat. 8. 6, 9. 29, 9. 30, 10. 5<sup>b</sup>, 13. 3, 13. 31, 26. 27<sup>b</sup>, 26. 44, 27. 11; Mk. 1. 15 (or pred. ?), 9. 25; L. 23. 46; J. 1. 15, 1. 32.—Other examples:—L. 5. 13 (MS. A): *aðenigende* = *extendens*; *behealdende* = *circumspiciens*, Mk. 3. 34; *ib.* = *intuitus*, Mk. 10. 21; Mk. 14. 13: *berende* = *bajulans*; Mk. 3. 5<sup>a</sup>: *besceawende* = *circumspiciens*; Mk. 10. 23: *beseonde* hine = *circumspiciens* (without object);—*biddende* = *rogans*, Mat. 8. 5; *ib.* = *deprecans*, Mk. 1. 40; *bletsiende* = *benedicens*, Mk. 14. 22, L. 1. 64; Mk. 5. 5: *ceorfende* = *concidens* (or pred. ?); J. 6. 6: *fandigende* his = *tentans* eum; Mk. 8. 13: *forlætende* = *dimittens*; Mat. 9. 12: *gehyrende* = *audiens*; *geseonde* = *videns*, Mk. 9. 15<sup>a</sup>, L. 1. 12 (no obj. in Latin); L. 14. 7: *gymende* = *intendens*; *hæbbende* = *habens*: Mk. 3. 1, 9. 47, L. 4. 33, 7. 8<sup>b</sup>; Mat. 9. 35<sup>a</sup>: *hælende* = *curans*; L. 17. 15: *mærsiende* = *magnificans*; L. 4. 40: *onsettende* = *imponens*; L. 8. 1<sup>a</sup>: *prediciende* = *prædicans* (or pred. ?); *secende* = *querens*: Mat. 12. 43, L. 11. 24, 13. 7 (or pred. ?);—L. 3. 16: *secgende* = *dicens*; Mk. 10. 16: *settende* = *imponens*; *slitende* = *discerpens*, Mk. 1. 26<sup>a</sup>, 9. 26<sup>b</sup>; *ib.* = *scindens*, Mk. 14. 63; L. 10. 39: *upbe-seonde* hine = *suscipiens* (no object); L. 18. 43: *wuldrigende*



= *magnificans*; L. 24. 12<sup>b</sup>: *wundrigende* ðæs = *mirans* quod (or pred.?).

NSF. (4):—Mat. 20. 20<sup>a</sup><sup>b</sup>: Ða com to him zebedeis bearna modor mid hyre bearnum hig *ge-eadmedende* & sum ðinge fram him *biddende* = Tunc accessit . . . mater, *adorans* et *petens* aliquid ab eo.—Other examples:—J. 11. 28: *cweðende* = *dicens*; Mk. 3. 8: *gehyrende* = *audientes*.

NSN. (3):—L. 2. 23: ðæt ælc wæpned gecynd-lim *ontynende* byð drihtne halig genemned = Quia omne masculinum *adaperiens* vulvam, sanctum Domino vocabitur.—Other examples:—Mk. 7. 19: *clænsigende* = *purgans*; L. 7. 29<sup>a</sup>: *gehyrende* = *audiens*.

NPM. (36):—Mk. 1. 5: & wæron . . . gefullode . . . , hyra synna *andetende* (MS. A.) = et baptizabantur . . . , *confitentes* peccata sua.—Other examples:—Mk. 6. 55: *befarende* = *percurrentes*; Mk. 2. 3: *berende* = *ferentes* (or pred.?): L. 24. 53<sup>b</sup>: *bletsigende* = *benedicentes* (or pred.?): Mat. 19. 3: *costnigende* hine = *tentantes* eum;—*cweðende* = *dicentes* in: Mat. 6. 31, 8. 25, 9. 27, 10. 7, 10. 12, 12. 10, 12. 38, 27. 23, 27. 29, Mk. 3. 11, J. 11. 31;—*demende* = *judicantes*: Mat. 19. 28, L. 22. 30 (or both pred.?): *fandi(g)ende* his = *tentantes* eum: Mk. 10. 2, J. 8. 6; L. 24. 52: *gebiddende* = *orantes* (no obj. in Latin); L. 6. 35: *gehihtende* = *sperantes*; *gehyrende* = *audientes*: L. 4. 28, 8. 15; L. 20. 11: *gewæcende* = *afficientes*; Mk. 7. 3: *healdende* = *tenentes*; *heriende* (*hergende*) = *laudantes*: L. 2. 20<sup>b</sup> (or pred.?), 24. 53<sup>a</sup> (or pred.?): L. 20. 47: *hiwgende* = *simulantes*; *secende* = *quærentes*: Mat. 12. 46, 12. 47, L. 11. 54; *ib.* = *quirentes*: L. 2. 45; Mk. 7. 13: *toslitende* = *rescindentes*; L. 23. 10: *wregende* = *accusantes* (or pred.?): L. 2. 20<sup>a</sup>: *wuldriende* = *glorificantes* (or pred.?).

NPF. (3):—Mat. 9. 33: Ða menigeo wundredon *cweðende* = *miratæ* sunt turbæ, *dicentes*.—Other examples:—Mat. 15. 31<sup>a</sup>: *geseonde* = *videntes*; Mat. 15. 30: *hæbbende* = *habentes*.

NPN. (4):—Mat. 8. 31: Ða deofla soðlice hyne bædon, ðus *cweðende* = *Dæmones* autem rogabant eum, *dicentes*. So *cweðende* = *dicentia* in L. 4. 41<sup>b</sup>.—Other examples: L. 4.

41<sup>a</sup>: *hrymende* = *clamantia*; Mat. 27. 55: *ðenigende* him = *ministrantes* ei.

NP. M. or N. (1):—L. 23. 49: *cuðan & wif geseonde* = *videntes*.

NDM. (1):—Mk. 11. 5: *Hwæt do gyt ðone folan untigende?* = *Quid facitis solventes pullum?*

DSM. (2):—L. 6. 48: *He ys gelic timbriendum* men his hus = *Similis est homini ædificanti domum*. Cf. L. 6. 49: *He is gelic ðam timbriendan* men his hus ofer ða eorðan = *similis est homini ædificanti domum* etc.

DPN. (1):—L. 7. 32<sup>o</sup>: *Hi synt gelice cildum . . . cweðendum* = *Similes sunt pueris . . . dicentibus*.

ASM. (5):—Mat. 8. 17: *ðæt wære gefylled ðæt gecweden is ðurh esaiað ðone witegan, ðus cweðende* = *Ut adimpleretur quod dictum est per Isaiað prophetam, dicentem*. So *cweðende* = *dicentem* in Mat. 12. 17, 27. 9.—Other examples:—Mk. 9. 17: *hæbbende* = *habentem*; L. 17. 7<sup>b</sup>: *læsgendne* = *pascentem*.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which finite verb is generally either subordinate or in immediate connection with an appositive participle (3):—

NSM. (1):—Mat. 14. 19: *beseah on ðone heofon & bletsigende bræc ða hlafas* = *adspiciens in cælum benedixit et fregit . . . panes*.

NSF. (1):—L. 18. 5: *ðe-læs heo æt neahstan cume me behropende* = *ne in novissimo veniens sugillet me* (or pred.?).

NPM. (1):—Mk. 9. 15<sup>b</sup>: *& hine gretende him to urnon* = *et accurrentes salutabant eum*.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle has no Latin correspondence (2):—

NSM. (1):—Mat. 22. 35: *axode hyne & fandode hys ðus cweðende* = *Et interrogavit eum unus ex eis legis doctor, tentans eum*.

NSF. (1):—J. 12. 28: *Ða com stefn of heofone ðus cweðende* = *Venit ergo vox de cælo*.

## B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (43).

## I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (36).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (34):—

NSM. (14):—Mk. 14. 51 : Sum iungling him fyligde mid anre scytan *bewæfed* nacod & hi namon hine = *Adolescens autem quidam sequebatur eum amictus sindone super nudo*.—Mk. 5. 30 : he cwæð *bewend* to ðære menigu = *conversus ad turbam aiebat*. So *bewend* = *conversus* : L. 7. 9, 10. 23, 14. 25, 23. 28.—Other examples:—Mk. 9. 20 : *forgnyden* = *elusus* ; Mk. 5. 4 : *gebunden* = *vinctus* ; Mat. 2. 22 : *gemynegod* = *admonitus* ; *gesett* = *constitutus* : Mat. 8. 9, L. 7. 8<sup>a</sup> ; Mk. 3. 5<sup>b</sup> : *geunret* = *contristatus* ; L. 22. 32 : *gewend* = *conversus* ; Mat. 25. 25 : *ofdræd* = *timens* (or pred.?).

NSF. (1):—Mat. 14. 8 : Ða cwæð heo fram hyre meder *gemyngod* = *At illa præmonita a matre sua . . . inquit*.

NSN. (2):—L. 11. 17 : Ælc rice on hyt sylf *todæled* byð toworpen = *Omne regnum in se ipsum divisum desolabitur*.—L. 10. 15 : *upahafen* = *exaltata*.

NPM. (5):—L. 1. 74 : ðæt we butan ege of ure feonda handa *alysede* him ðeowian = *Ut sine timore, de manu . . . liberati, serviamus illi*.—Other examples:—*gefullode* (*gefullede*) = *baptizati*, L. 7. 29<sup>b</sup>, 7. 30 ; L. 9. 31 : *gesewene* = *visi* ; Mat. 7. 6 : *gewende* = *conversi*.

NPN. (1):—Mat. 26. 47 : Ða com iudas . . . & micel fole mid hym mid swurdum & sahlum *asende* fram . . . ealdrum = *ecce Judas . . . venit, et cum eo turba multa cum gladiis et fustibus, missi a principibus etc.*

DSN. (1):—Mat. 13. 47<sup>a</sup> : Eft is heofena rice gelic *asendum* nette on Ða sæ = *Iterum simile est regnum cœlorum sagenæ missæ in mare*.

ASM. (7):—Mk. 16. 6 : ge secað ðæne nazareniscan hæ-lend *ahangenne* = *Jesum quæritis Nazarenum, crucifixum*.—Other examples:—Mat. 27. 37 : *awritenne* = *scriptam* ; Mk.

15. 17: *awundenne* = *plectentes*; Mk. 15. 15: *beswungenne* = *cæsum*; L. 23. 16: *gebetne* = *emendatum*; Mat. 27. 16: *gehæftne* = *vinctum*; L. 7. 25: *gescryddne* = *indutum*.

ASF. (1):—L. 22. 12: he eow betæcð mycele healle *gedæfte* = ipse ostendit vobis *cœnaculum magnum stratum*.

ASN. (2):—L. 6. 38: god gemet & full *geheapod* . . . hig syllað = *mensuram bonam, et confertam et coagitatam* . . . dabunt; Mat. 27. 34: *gemenged* = *mixtum*.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin finite verb, which finite verb is usually subordinate or in immediate connection with an appositive participle (1):—

ASM. (1):—L. 20. 15: hig hine of ðam wingearde awurpon *ofslegene* = *ejectum illum extra vineam occiderunt*.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (1):—

NSF. (1):—L. 1. 28: hal wes ðu mid gyfe *gefylled* = Ave, *gratia plena* (or subst.?).

## II. WITH AN OBJECT (7).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (7):—

NSM. (1):—Mk. 9. 31: & *ofslagen* ðam ðriddan dæge he arist = et *occisus* tertia die resurget.

DSF. (1):—L. 1. 27: wæs asend gabriel . . . to *beweddudre* fæmnan anum were ðæs nama wæs iosep = . . . ad virginem *desponsatam* viro cui nomen erat J.

ASM. (3):—Mat. 11. 8: oððe hwi eode ge ut geseon mann hnescum gyrlum *gescrydne*? = Sed quid existis videre? hominem mollibus *vestitum*? So *gescrydne* = *indutum*: L. 23. 11; Mk. 16. 5: *oferwrohne* = *co-opertum*.

ASN. (1):—Mat. 11. 7: Hwi eode ge ut on wesðen geseon winde *awegyð* hreod? = Quid existis in desertum videre? arundinem vento *agitata*?

APM. (1):—Mat. 4. 24: hi brohton him ealle yfelhæbbende, missenlicum adlum & on tintegrum *gegripene* =

obtulerunt ei omnes male habentes, variis languoribus et tormentis comprehensos.

---

*Note: Examples of Participles hitherto cited as Appositive.*

A. Erdmann (p. 26) considers *bebeodende* appositive in *Matthew* 11. 1 (*hyt wæs geworden ða se hælynd ðys ge-endude hys twelf leorning-cnihtum bebeodende he for ðanun* = *factum est, quum consummasset Jesus præcipiens duodecim discipulis suis, transiit inde*), and that *ðys* is the object of *bebeodende*; while Mätzner (III., p. 70) and March (§ 458) seem to hold that the participle here is used substantivally and is the object of *ge-endude*. To me, however, neither of these views seems tenable; I take *ðys* to be the object of *bebeodende* and the participle to be used predicatively after the intransitive verb of ending, as is common in Greek (cf. Goodwin, *Gr. Grammar*, § 1578) and as occurs in the Greek of this verse.

Again, Erdmann (p. 28) holds that *ganginge* is appositive in *Luke* 9. 34 (*hi ondredon him gangende on ðæt genip* = *timeverunt, intransitibus illis in nubem*); but, as I have since tried to show (*Abs. Ptc. in A.-S.*, p. 13), the participle is more probably a crude absolute dative.

According to Erdmann (p. 28) *ahsiende* is possibly appositive in *Mark* 9. 32 (*hi adredon hine ahsiende* = *timebant interrogare eum*), while Mätzner (III., p. 70) and March (§ 458) appear to look upon *ahsiende* as the substantival object of *adredon*. For several reasons, however, I believe that *ahsiende* is to be emended to *ahsienne*, which latter is the infinitive object of *adredon*. (1) We know that this confusion of infinitive and participial forms occurs in the *Gospels* (cf. above *Mk.* 1. 5, where I give MS. A.'s *andetende* instead of the *Corpus* *anddetenne*). (2) We find the verb *ondredan* governing an inflected infinitive as direct object (cf. *Mat.* 1. 20, 2. 22, both cited by Erdmann). (3) *ahsienne* would correspond better with the infinitive of the Latin (and Greek) than would *ahsiende*.

In *Luke* 9. 55, Professor Bright, following MSS. B. and C., reads: *hine bewend, he hig ðreade* (= *conversus increpavit illos*), in which case *bewend* would be appositive. But, as we have no other instance in the *Gospels* of the past participle (*bewend*) governing an accusative, it seems better to read, with the remaining MSS., *bewende (bewente)*.\* The Lindisfarne and Rushworth *Glosses* likewise have a finite verb here. For the other occurrences of *bewend* in the *Gospels*, see NSM. under B, I., 1 above.

## WULFSTAN (28).

### A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (9).

#### I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (3).

NSM. (1):—244. 7<sup>a</sup>: *ðæt is fæder and sunu and halig gast and is an soð god rixigende and gemende ealra his gesceafta a butan ende.*

NPM. (1):—295. 14: *hi sculon fleonde on gefeohte beon ofslagene.*

NPN. (1):—236. 26: *and ða deoflu wendon sceamigende aweg.*

#### II. WITH AN OBJECT (6).

NSM. (5):—199. 15: *be ðam awrat Iohannes . . . ðus cweðende.* *Ib.* 201. 8, 246. 11, both immediately before a Latin quotation. [Only one other example of *cweðende* occurs in Wulfstan (see 105. 30 under NPM.). Wulfstan translates *dicens (dicentes)* twice by a co-ordinated finite verb (60. 14, 87. 15) and once by a subordinated finite verb (87. 18), while twice he leaves it untranslated (31. 32, 77. 3).]—244. 7<sup>b</sup>: *ðæt is fæder and sunu and halig gast and is an soð*

\*The past participle must however certainly be allowed to govern the accusative. I should still regard *hine bewend* as a servile translation of *conversus*, and the readings of Corp. and A. as representing steps in revision.—J. W. B.

god rixigende and *gemende* ealra his gesceafta a butan ende.—278. 9: and on ðam eahtoðan dæge manna gehwylc ham ferde mid fulre blisse gode ælmihtigum *ðancjende* ðære mærdæ (or predicative?).

NPM. (1):—105. 30: we hine ænne ofer ealle oðre ðing lufjað and wurðjað mid gewisum geleafan *cweðende* etc.

## B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (19).

### I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (15).

NSM. (2):—25. 19: se ðe ðæne bryne ðurhfærð *unbenced* (or pred. ?); 26. 7: *gemenced* (or pred. ?).

NPM. (7):—133. 5<sup>a, b</sup>: and ge *tofesede* swiðe *afirhte* oft litel werod earhlice forbugað = 131. 23: et animam uestram *tabescentem* faciam, et persequentur uos inimici uestri, et fugietis nullo persequente.—137. 18: and we beoð him ðonne færinga beforan brohte æghwanon *cumene* to his ansyne.—Other examples:—*gehadode* (*gehadede*): 160. 1, 181. 29, 272. 21, 292. 30.

ASF. (5):—263. 4, 5, 6<sup>a, b</sup>: ðeah ðe ða mihtegestan and ða ricestan hatan him reste gewyrcean of marmanstane and mid goldfrætsum and mid gimcynnum eal *astæned* and mid seolfrenum ruwum and godwebbe eall *oferwrigen* and mid deorwyrðum wyrtegemengnessum eal *gestreded* and mid goldleafum *gestrewed* ymbutan; 163. 6: *gewylede*.

AP. M. or F. (1):—46. 7: wa eow, he cwæð, ðe lecgað togædere hamas and æhta on unriht *begyten*e on æghwilce healfe.

### II. WITH AN OBJECT (4).

NSM. (1):—48. 3: and forðam he sceal drefan dimne and deopne hellewites grund, helps *bedæled*.

NPM. (3):—256. 12<sup>a, b, c</sup>: ac gewitað fram me, wuldre *bedælede*, freondum *afyrede*, feondum *betæhte* in ðam hatan wylme hellefyres.

*Note: Latin Participles in Wulfstan.*—Thirty-four Latin participles occur in Wulfstan. Of these, twelve are untranslated (*adorantes*, 175. 14; *audientes* (twice), 42. 29, 47. 12; *dicens* (twice), 31. 32, 77. 3; *egressus*, 87. 10; *elevatus*, 31. 19; *placentem*, 31. 28; *reatus*, 63. 12; *respondens*, 87. 12; *scribentes*, 43. 9; *sumentes*, 30. 12); twelve are translated by a subordinated finite verb (*accedens*, 29. 11; *agnoscens*, 29. 15; *audiens*, 190. 11; *dicentes*, 87. 18; *fallens*, 50. 19; *habentes*, 43. 15<sup>b</sup>; *ponentes* (twice), 42. 25, 26; *sciens*, 248. 9; *sperantes* (twice), 43. 15, 48. 6; *tabescentes*, 131. 30); and nine are translated by a co-ordinated finite verb (*dans*, 29. 21; *dicens* (twice), 60. 14, 87. 15; *faciens*, 248. 10; *respondens* (*respondentes*) (thrice), 62. 3, 67. 23, 87. 16; *reuer- tentes* (twice), 44. 5, 49. 17).

BENET<sup>1</sup> (142).

## A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (103).

## I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (40).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (35):—

NSM. (12):—95. 10: *niwan cumende* (text: *cumenne*) ænig to gecyrrednesse ne si him eðelic forgifen infæreld = Noviter *veniens* quis ad conversionem non ei facilis tribuatur ingressus. So *cumende* = *veniens*: 80. 6, 95. 13.—Other examples:—4. 8: *forseonde* = *respuens*; 36. 2<sup>b</sup>: *gangende* = *ambulans*; 116. 15: *gebetende* = *satisfaciens*; 114. 14: *getruwigende* = *confidens*; 69. 5: *ingangende* = *ingrediens*; 68. 1: *lufiænde* = *diligens*; 36. 2<sup>a</sup>: *sittende* = *sedens*; 36. 2<sup>o</sup>: *standende* = *stans*; 57. 3<sup>b</sup>: *ðurhwunigende* = *persistens*.

NSF. (1):—2. 11: utan gehyran . . . *clipiende* hwæt us myngie stefn = *audiamus* . . . *clamans* quid nos ammon-  
eat vox.

NSN. (1):—9. 16: ðæt forme mynstermanna ðæt is mynsterlic *campiende* under regule oððe abbude = *Primum*



cœnobitarum hoc est monasteriale *militans* sub regula vel abbate.

NPM. (13):—55. 7: *arisende* soðlice to godes weorce . . . gemedlice tihtan oððe laran = *Surgentes* vero ad opus dei invicem se moderate cohortent. So *arisende* (*ariscende*) = *surgentes*: 55. 4, 81. 16.—Other examples:—24. 12: *droh(ti)gende* = *degentes*; 106. 11: *forahrædigende* = *prevenientes*; 24. 11<sup>b</sup>: *gangende* = *ambulantes*; *gecyrrende* = *revertentes*: 92. 14, 93. 2; 24. 10: *libbende* = *viventes*; 6. 12: *ðurhwunigende* = *perseverantes*; *utgangende* = *exeuntes*: 75. 5<sup>b</sup>, 81. 12, 93. 1.

NP. M. or F. (1):—45. 7: *gebyriende* = *pertinentes*.

Note.—*utgangendum* (in 66. 15: *ða utgangendum* = *egredientes*) is either absolute or substantive; in the latter case read *ða utgangendan*.

GSM. (1):—25. 10: se ðe heortan his besceawað *ceoriendes* = qui cor ejus respicit murmurantis.

GPM. (2):—69. 1: meosan *etenda* gebroðrum (read *gebroðra*) rædinc wana beon na scell = Mensis fratrum *edentium* lectio deesse non debet; 78. 12: *utgangendre* = *exeuntium*.

DSM. (1):—13. 9: ðæt ahwenne him na secge *syngendum* = nequando illi dicat deus *peccanti*.

DPM. (1):—118. 10: us asolcenum ȝ yfel *lybbendum* ȝ gimeleasum scame gescyndnysse = nobis autem . . . male *viventibus* . . . rubor confusionis est.

APM. (2):—21. 7: geðohtas ða yfelan heortan his to *becumende* (text *becumenne*) sona to christe aslidan = Cogitationes malas cordi suo *advenientes* mox ad christum allidere. So *cumende* = *advenientes*: 33. 5.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin adjective (2):—

NSM. (1):—61. 6: hordere si gecoren of gegæderunge wis . . . na upahafen [blank] *drefende* = Cellarius . . . eligatur de congregatione sapiens . . . non elatus non *turbulentus*.

NPM. (1):—11. 2: ða . . . cumliðiað æfre *worigende* ȝ næfre staðolfæste = qui . . . hospitantur semper *vagi* et nunquam *stabiles*.

3. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerund in the ablative (3):—

NSM. (3):—61. 11: *forseonde* hine he ne gedrefe = non *spernendo* eum contristet. [Cf. Benedict<sup>1</sup> 54. 14: he ðeah *mid forseawennesse* hine ne geunrotsige.]—114. 10<sup>a & b</sup>: his unacumenlicnesse se ðe gewis [blank] ȝ gedafenlice [blank] na *modigende* [text: modigenne] oððe *wiðstandende* [blank] = impossibilitatis sue causas ei qui sibi preest patienter et oportune suggerat, non *superbiendo* aut *resistendo* vel contradicendo. [Cf. Benedict<sup>1</sup> 128. 15, 16: ðæt he eft mid geðylde on gedafenre tide his mægenleaste his ealdre gecyðe, he no ðeah na *wiðstande*, ne *mid modignesse* ne *wiðcweðe*.]

Note 1.—It is possible to construe *forseonde*, *modigende*, and *wiðstandende* above as appositive participles, but it is also possible that they may be used here precisely as the Latin gerunds are; that is, they may be verbal nouns in an oblique case instead of verbal adjectives in the nominative case. Certainly *yrnende* in the following is a verbal noun: Benet<sup>1</sup> 3. 15: . . . n ðæs rices healle on inne gyf we wyllað [blank], buton [blank] mid godum dædum *yrnende* nateshwon ne bið becumen = (In) *cujus regni tabernaculo si volumus habitare, nisi illuc bonis actibus currendo minime pervenitur*. [Cf. Benedict<sup>1</sup> 3. 9: Natoðæshwon his rices eardung bið gefaren buton mid gymene and gehealdsumnesse godra dæda; ofst and hradung godra weorca is to ðæm rice weges færeld.] In all probability, too, *onginnende* and *standende*, corresponding respectively to a Latin gerundive and gerund, are verbal nouns, not verbal adjectives, in the following:—Benet<sup>1</sup> 105. 5<sup>a & b</sup>: æfter endebyrdnesse ða ða he gesette oððe ða ða habbað ða sylfan gebroðran hi ne genealæcan [blank] to huselgange to on \* sealmum *ginnende* on choro *standende* = Ergo secundum ordines quos constituerit vel quos habuerint ipsi fratres si [read *sic*] accedant ad pacem, ad communionem, ad psalmum *imponendum*, in choro *standum*. [Cf.

\*As Logeman (foot-note to p. 105) says, *on* belongs with *ginnende*.

Benedict<sup>1</sup> 115. 4, 5: . . . gange ælc æfter oðrum to cosse, to husle and be ðan on chore *stande* and sealmas and gehwylce ðenunga *beginne*.]

Note 2.—In the following the present participle that corresponds to a Latin gerund in the ablative seems in use to be a pure adverb:—Benet<sup>1</sup> 43. 4: ðæt is ðæt sig [blank] sungen buton antempne *teonde* æthwega swa swa on ðam sunnan die dæge = id est, ut sexagesimus sextus psalmus dicatur sine antiphona *subtrahendo* modice sicut dominica. [Cf. Benedict<sup>1</sup> 37. 8: þæt is ðæt se syxandsyxtigeða sealm . . . sy gecweden butan antefene, and he *sy* on swege *gelencged* hwæthwara ealswa on sunnandæge.]—Benet<sup>1</sup> 76. 3: ðane forði eallunga *teonde* latlice we wyllað beon gesæd = quem propter hoc omnino *protrahendo* et morose volumus dici. [Cf. Benedict<sup>1</sup> 68. 9: ðonne we eac forði on ðam sancge *lenegað*.]

## II. WITH AN OBJECT (63).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (62):—

NSM. (32):—68. 1: sig hus cyte ofer hi betæht 7 ðen *adrædende* [blank] 7 lufænde = sit cella super se deputata, et servitor *timens* deum et diligens. [Here and occasionally at other places *deum* is not glossed, perhaps because of its familiarity.]—34. 6: gelyfe . . . *geeadmetende* hine sylfne = credat . . . *humilians* se.—Other examples:—29. 11: *asmaidand* (MS.: *asmaidan*) = *scrutans* (or predicative?); 16. 8: *behiviende* = *dissimulans*; 13. 8: oðrum *bodiende* = *aliis predicans*; 104. 16: *brucende* (MS.: *brucenne*) *anwealde* = *utens* potestate; 111. 8: *donde* = *faciens*; 61. 7: *drædende* (MS. *drædenne*) = *timens*; 31. 16: *geefenlæcende* = *immitans*; 5. 3: *gefyllende* = *complens*; 29. 3: *gehealdende* = *custodiens*; *gehyrende* = *audiens*; 3. 1, 17. 14; 35. 2: *habbende* = *habens*; 98. 11: *healdende* = *reservans*; 31. 10: *lufiende* = *amans*; 14. 14: *mængcende* *tidum tida* = *miscens* temporibus tempora; 109. 5: *nimende* = *sumens*; 2. 16: *secende*

= *quærens*; 28. 14: *secende* [*sic*!] = *ponens*; *secgende* = *dicens*: 36. 5, 78. 10; 16. 9: *taliende* (MS.: *taliendre*) = *pendens*; 4. 7: *tihtende* (MS.: *tihende*) = *suadentem*; 109. 2<sup>a</sup>: *ðencende* = *cogitans*; 36. 4: *wenende* = *existimans*; *witende* = *sciens*: 15. 12, 19. 3, 57. 4<sup>a</sup>, 97. 5, 103. 14; 1. 8: *wiðcweðende* *lustum* = *abrenuntians* *voluptatibus*.

NSF. (1):—98. 6: *ðæt fers eall seo gæderung ðriddan siðan togeðeodende* [text: -enne] mid [blank] = *Quem versum omnis congregatio tertio respondeat adjungentes gloria patri*. [The A.-S. has nothing corresponding to the Latin *respondeat*. Of course, the A.-S. participle may be plural, as the Latin one is.]

NSN. (3):—27. 2: *clypað us gewritt ðæt godcunda eala seccende* (= *secgende*) = *Clamat nobis scriptura divina fratres dicens*. So *secgende* = *dicens*: 30. 14.—32. 7: *gesutuliende* = *ostendens*.

NPM. (19):—5. 16: *ȝ gif fleonde helle wite life we wyllað becuman to ðam ecan* = *Et si fugientes gehenne pœnas ad vitam volumus pervenire perpetuam*.—Other examples:—4. 11: *ahwenende* (= *ah wenende*?) = *existimantes*; 12. 14: *forhicgende* = *contempnentes*; *forlæte* = *relinquentes*: 23. 16, 24. 1; *ib.* = *deserentes*: 23. 17; 32. 12: *gefyllende* = *adimplentes*; 24. 11<sup>a</sup>: *gehyrsumiende* (w. dat.) = *obedientes*; *healdende* = *servantes*: 10. 9<sup>b</sup>; *ib.* = *observantes*: 117. 16; 51. 10: *myndigende* = *commonentes*; *nimende* = *accipientes*: 92. 7; *ib.* = *assumentes*: 109. 16; 3. 16: *secgende* = *dicentes*; *ðeowgende* (*ðeowiende*) (w. dat.) = *servientes*: 11. 3, 67. 13; 109. 15<sup>b</sup>: *wenende* = *estimantes*; *witende* = *scientes*: 107. 12, 116. 4.

GSM. (3):—31. 11: *ðas stefne drihtnes mid dædum ac he geefenlæce secgendes* = *sed vocem illam domini factis imitetur dicentis*. So *secgendes* = *dicentis*, 57. 4<sup>b</sup>. Cf. 109. 2<sup>b</sup> (*ðencende* *gescad* *ðæs halgan iacobes secgende* = *cogitans discretionem sancti jacob dicentis*.)

GPM. (1):—111. 5: *swa hwænne swa geceost* [blank] mid geðeahte [blank] *ondrædendra gode* etc. = *quemcumque elegerit abba cum consilio fratrum timentium deum*.

DSF. (1):—3. 8: est [*sic*] luftempre [blank] (ðiss)ere stefne [blank] *gelaðgendre* la ge ða leofestan gebroðran = Quid dulcius nobis (ab h)ac voce domini *invitantis*.

ASM. (1):—107. 7: ðæt [blank] for his leathrum . . . *geðafiendne* (text: -enne) had mid gelicum geðeahte gif gecysð = Quod si etiam omnis congregatio vitiis suis . . . *consentientem* personam pari consilio elegerit.

APN. (1):—26. 14: higlista [blank] oððe idel word [blank] *stirienda* . . . we . . . fordemað = Scurilitates vero vel verba otiosa et risum *moventia* . . . dampnamus.

2. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin gerund in the ablative (1):—

NSM. (1):—31. 5: *ariende* = *parcendo*.

## B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (39).

### I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (30).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (30):—

NSM. (15):—59. 6: ðeah ðe he *amansumad* hit ne gebet teartere genealæce ðræiungan = etiam si *excommunicatus* non emendaverit acrior ei accedat correptio.—Other examples:—100. 3: *bepæht* (MS. *bepæhð*) = *deceptus*; 68. 1<sup>o</sup>: *fulfremed* = *sollicitus*; 77. 13: *geasindrod* = *sequestratus*; 97. 17: *gebeden* = *rogatus*; 107. 14: *gehadod* = *ordinatus*; 78. 14: *gehaten* = *jussus*; 104. 6: *geminegod* = *ammonitus*; 54. 7<sup>b</sup>: *geðreat* = *correptus*; 2. 5: *geyrsod* = *irritatus*; 78. 11: *pro afered* = *stratus*; 12. 11: *tolyse* = *absolutus*; 98. 17: *unscryd* = *exutus*; *upahafen* = *elatus*; 59. 9, 61. 5.

NSF. (1):—36. 12: sona to ðære soðan lufan godes becymð to ðære *fulfremed* ut seo asend ege = mox ad karitatem dei perveniet illam que *perfecta* foras mittit timorem.

NSN. (1):—70. 17: an pund *awegen* genihtsumige on dege = Panis libera una *propensa* sufficiat in die.

NPM. (10):—10. 7: *ða on ænigum regole na afandode vel [sic] oððe afundennessa lareowas . . . leogan gode . . . synd acnawene* = *qui nulla regula approbati experientia magistri . . . mentiri deo . . . noscuntur*.—Other examples:—113. 9: *astreht* (MS.: *astrehð*) = *prostrati*; 44. 11: *gecyrde* = *conversi*; 10. 1<sup>a</sup>: *gelærde* = *docti*; 32. 14: *genyðde* = *angarizati*; 76. 10: *gesawene* = *visi*; 75. 5<sup>a</sup>: *gesette* = *positi*; 10. 1<sup>b</sup>: *getyde* = *instructi*; 10. 9<sup>a</sup>: *nexode* = *molliti*; 109. 15<sup>a</sup>: *tobrædde* = *inflati*.

ASM. (2):—118. 12: *ðysne ðane læstan acunnednesse regol awritenne fylstendum criste ðu gefremme* = *hanc miniam inchoationis regulam discriptam adjuvante christo perficias*; 20. 10: *gedonne* = *factam*.

APF. (1):—92. 15: [*b*]rec *ðas ða ða* [*blank*] *beoð asende on hrægelhuse niman ða hi gecyrrende geðwagenu ðara agenbringan* = *Femuralia hi qui in via diriguntur de vestuario accipiant qui revertentes lota ibi restituant*. [Is the *-u* of *geðwagenu* due to *lotu*, and is *geðwagenu* to be considered a neuter despite the gender of [*b*]rec ?]

Note.—In the following, *gewunede* and *gedihte* appear to be used as adverbs:—92. 16: *cufian ȝ tonican beon oðerhwilen synd gewunede sunt [sic] habban æthwigan beteran* = *Cuculle et tunice sint aliquanto solito quas habent modice meliores*; 40. 11: *sittendum eallum gedihte ȝ be endebyrdnyse on sceamolom* = *residentibus cunctis disposite et per ordinem in subselliis*.

## II. WITH AN OBJECT (9).

1. An A.-S. appositive participle corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (9):—

NSM. (1):—54. 7<sup>a</sup>: *ðæt ænig of ðam on sumere færunga tobræd modignesse gif bið gemet teallic etc.* = *Quod si quisque ex eis aliqua forte inflatus superbia repertus fuerit reprehensibilis etc.*

GSF. (1):—16. 7: *ðæt he na ðæt an nyðerunga æfwyrðe heorde him sylfan befæstre ðolige* = *ut non solum detrimenta gregis sibi commissi non patiatur.*

GPF. (1):—16. 9: *hæle saule him sylfan bifæstra* = *salutem animarum sibi commissarum.*

DSN. (1):—57. 3<sup>a</sup>: *ana* [blank] *to weorce* [blank] *to betæhtum* = *Solus sit ad opus sibi injunctum.*

DPM. (1):—31. 1: *ȝ gif fram englum* [blank] *betehtum* = *et si ab angelis nobis deputatis.*

DPN. (1):—75. 4: *on ðam sylfum betæhtum him sylfum ðingum* = *in assignato sibi commissio.*

ASM. (1):—104. 4: *se* [blank] *regol fram decanum oððe fram pravostum him sylfan gesetne gehealden wite* = *qui tamen regulam a decanis vel prepositis sibi constitutam servare sciat.*

ASF. (2):—104. 15: *se ne abbod gedrefe befæste him sylfum heorde* = *Qui abbas non conturbet gregem sibi commissam*; 62. 15: *him betæhte* = *sibi commissum.*

## II.—IN THE POEMS.

### A.—LONGER POEMS.

#### BEOWULF (91).

##### A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (23).

##### I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (19).

NSM. (9):—2272: *se ðe byrnende biorgas seceð*; *ib.* 2569 (or pred.?); 815: *wæs gehwæðer oðrum lifigende lað.*—Other examples:—2219: *slæpende*; 2235: *ðanchycgende*; 2548: *umbyrnende*; 708: *wæccende*; 2062: *wigende* (or *lifigende*?); 2716: *wishycgende.*

NSF. (1):—1953: *ðær hio siððan wel . . . lifgesceafta lifigende breac.*

NPM. (2):—916: *Hwilum flitende* *fealwe stræte mearum mæton*; 2850: *hy scamende scyldas bæran.*

N. Dual M. (1):—535: *Wit ðæt gecwædon cnihtwesende.*

DSM. (2):—1389: *ðæt bið drihtguman unlifgendum æfter selest*; 1187: *gif he ðæt eal gemon, hwæt wit to willan and to worðmyndum umbor-wesendum ær arna gefremedon* (or subst. here?).

ASM. (3):—2781: *ligegeasan wæg hatne for horde, hioro-weallende*; 372: *Ic hine cuðe cnihtwesende*; 46: *ðe hine æt frumsceafta forð onsendon ænne ofer yðe umbor wesende.*

APM. (1):—1581: *slæpende* *fræt folces Denigea fyftyne men.*

## II. WITH OBJECT (4).

NSM. (3):—2106: *gomela Scilding fela fricgende feorran rehte* (but Köhler considers *fela* an adverb); 2350: *for ðon he ær fela nearo neðende niða gedigde*; 1227: *Beo ðu suna minum dædum gedefe dream healdende.* [Should we not write *dream-healdende*, as Grein does in his Glossary? Cf. *dream-hæbbendra* in Genesis 81. Köhler considers *healdende* as substantivized.]

NPM. (1):—1829: *Gif ic ðæt gefricge ofer floda begang, ðæt ðec ymbesittend egeasan ðywað, swa ðec hetende hwilum dydon, ic ðe ðusenda ðegna bringe, hæleða to helpe* (or a substantivized participle, as Köhler holds).

## B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (68).

### I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (18).

NSM. (9):—1351: *oðer earmsceapen on weres wæstmum wræclastas træd* (may be considered substantivized as by Köhler); 2569: *Gewat ða byrnende gebogen scriðan* (or pred.); 846: *hu he . . . on nicera mere fæge and geflymed*



feorhlastas bær; *ib.* 1370; 2852: He *gewergad* sæt; 868: guma *gilphlæden* or attrib. ?); 262: Wæs min fæder folcum gecyðed, æðele ordfruma Ecgðeow *haten* (may be pred.); 1913: Ceol up geðrang, *lyftgeswenced* on lande stod; 2443: sceolde hwæðre swa ðeah æðeling *unwrecen* ealdres linnan.

NSF. (2):—614: cwen Hroðgares . . . grette *goldhroden* guman on healle; *ib.* 1948.

NSN. (1):—3012: ac ðær is maðma hord, gold unrime grimme *geceapod* (may be pred.).

NS. M. or N. (1):—3085: Hord is gesceawod, grimme *gegongen*.

NPM. (1):—1819: we sæliðend secgan wyllað, feorran *cumene*, ðæt etc.

NPN. (2):—59: Ðæm feower bearn forð *gerimed* in woruld wocun.—Other examples:—3049: ðurhetone (or pred. ?).

DSM. (1):—1479: ðæt ðu me a wære *forðgewitenum* on fæder stæle (cf. *Abs. Ptc. in A.-S.*, p. 16).

APF. (1):—1937: ac him wælbende weotode tealde, *handgewriðene*.

## II. WITH AN OBJECT (50).

NSM. (27):—1113: wæs eðgesyne . . . æðeling manig wundum *awyrdded*; 721: Com . . . rinc siðian dreamum *bedæled*; *ib.* 1275.—Other examples:—1451: *befongen* frea-wrasnum; 2274: fyre *befangen*; *ib.* 2595; 531: beore *druncen*; 1467: wine —; 2580: bysigum *gebæded*; 3117: strengum *gebæded*; 2359: bille *gebeaten*; 2401: torne *gebolgen*; 2111: eldo *gebunden*; 923: cystum *gecyðed*; 217: winde *gefysed*; 630: guðe *gefysed*; 2309: fyre *gefysed*; 1005: nyde *genyded* (Wülckerhas *genyðde*); 975: synnum *geswenced*; 1368: hundum *geswenced*; 1285: hamere *geðuren*; 250: wæpnum *geweorðad*; 1450: since —; 1038: since *gewurðad*; 1645: dome —; 2255: *hyrsted* golde; 845: niða *ofercumen*.

NSF. (5):—1443: scolde herebyrne hondum *gebroden*, sid and searofah sund cunnian.—Other examples:—3018: golde *bereafod*; 1333: fylle *gef(r)ægnod*; 777: golde *geregnad*; 624: mode *geðungen*.

NSN. (5):—553: beadohrægl . . . on breostum læg, golde *gegyrved*.—Other examples:—2680: niðe *genyded*; 2764: searwum *gesæld*; 2441: fyrenum *geseyngad*; 406: seowed smiðes orðancum.

NS. M. or N. (1): 3146: astah . . . swogende leg wope *bewunden*.

NPM. (3):—1126: Gewiton him ða wigend wica neosian freondum *befeallen* Frysland geseon; 480: Ful oft gebeotedon beore *druncne* ofer ealowæge oretmecgas.—Other examples:—3014: feore *gebohte*.

ASM. (1):—3139: Him ða gegiredan Geata leode ad on eorðan unwaclicne, helmum *behongen*.

ASF. (2):—2931: bryd aheorde, gomela iomeowlan golde *berofene*.—Other examples:—2192: golde *gegyrede*.

ASN. (2):—1900: He ðæm batwearde *bunden* golde swurd gesealde; 1531: wearp ða wundenmæl wrættum *gebunden* yrre oretta (though some consider *gebunden* as nom.).

AS. M. or N. (1):—2769: Swylce he siomian geseah segn eallgylden, . . . *gelocen* leoðocræftum.

APM. (1):—1028: ne gefrægn ic freondlicor feower madmas golde *gegyrede* gummanna fela in ealobence oðrum gesellan.

APN. (2):—2762: Geseah . . . fyrmanna fatu feormendlease hyrstum *behrorene*; 871: soðe *gebunden*.

Note 1.—Köhler reads *ealo drincende* in 1945, and considers *drincende* an appositive participle; I retain Wülker's *ealodrincende*, which is a substantive.

Note 2.—The text is too defective to admit of classifying the following: 304: *gehroden*; 1031: *bewunden*; 2229: *earmsceapen*; 2230: *sceapen*; 3151: *wunden*.

GENESIS<sup>1</sup> (42).

## A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (10).

## I. WITHOUT OBJECT (10).

NSM. (3):—1583: ac he *hlihende* broðrum sægde.—Other examples:—874: *sceomiende*; 347: *sorgiende*.

NSF. (1):—890: *gitsiende*.

NSN. (1):—560: *willende*.

NPM. (1):—2066: *hlihende*.

GPF. (1):—81: ðrymmas weoxon duguða mid drihtne *dreamhæbbendra*.

DSM. (2):—2663: ðæt ic ðe lissa *lifigendum* giet on dagum læte duguða brucan, since gesundne; 2649: Me sægde ær ðæt wif hire wordum selfa *unfrigendum*, ðæt etc.

ASM. (1):—2169: ac ic ðe *lifigende* her wið weana gehwam wreo ȝ scylde.

## B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (32).

## I. WITHOUT OBJECT (11).

NSM. (4):—1571: Swiðe on slæpe sefa nearwode, ðæt he ne mihte on gemynd *drepen* hine handum self mid hrægle wryon.—Other examples:—725: *gehugod*; 481: *gewanod*; 1799: *haten* (may be pred., as Seyfarth holds).

GPM. (1):—1836: feorren *cumenra*.

GPN. (1):—1185: wintra *gebidenra* etc.

ASM. (1):—1865: *geðreadne*.

ASF. (2):—165: *æteowde*; 549: *gesceapene* (or pred.?).

ASN. (1):—2022: *forslegen* (or attrib.?).

APN. (1):—1520: *besmiten*.

## II. WITH OBJECT (21).

NSM. (9):—930: dugeðum *bedæled*; 2099: eorlum *bedroren*; 2124: secgum *befylled*; 2605: wine *druncen*;

1818: drihtne *gecoren*; 2668: egesan *geðread*; 2137: elne *gewurðod*; 32: niðes *ofðyrsted*; 2740: hleowfeðrum *ðeahht* (or pred.?).

NPM. (5):—86: leohte *belorene*; 76: ðystrum *beðeahhte*; 1734: metode *gecorene*; 1693: hleoðrum *gedælde*; 2002: ecgum *ofðegde*.

NPF. (2):—2082: dome *bedrorene*; 2010: freondum *be-slægene*.

NPN. (2):—2001: secgum *ofslegene*; 1989: helmum *ðeahhte*.

ASN. (2):—1263: hundtwelftig *geteled* rime wintra; 2344: *geteled* rimes.

APN. (1):—1336: ðu seofone genim on ðæt sundreced tudra gehwilces *geteled* rimes.

*Note.*—Seyfarth considers the following as appositive participles:—183: *unwundod*, 319: *fylde*, 1472: *liðend*, 2480: *ðearfende*. But, in *The Abs. Ptc. in A.-S.* (p. 17), I have shown that *unwundod* is used predicatively, and that *fylde* is a finite verb. The form of *liðend* seems to me to show that it is a substantive. I consider that *ðearfende* is used substantively, as does Dietrich (quoted by Wülker).—In 2603, *genearwod*, the text is too defective to admit of classification.

## EXODUS (12).

### A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (3).

#### I. WITHOUT OBJECT (3).

NSF. (1):—213: *Wæccende* bad eall seo sibgedriht somod ætgædere maran mægenes.

NPM. (2):—452: flugon *forhtigende* (or pred.?): 264: *lifigende*.

### B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (9).

#### I. WITHOUT OBJECT (3).

NPN. (1):—497: synfullra sweet sawlum lunnon fæste *befarene*.

ASM. (1):—412: *unweaxenne*.

ASN. (1):—232: x. hund *geteled* tireadigra.

## II. WITH OBJECT (6).

NSM. (3):—532<sup>2</sup>: wreccum *alyfed*; 532<sup>1</sup>: wommum *awyrged*; 549: mihtum *swiðed*.

NSF. (1):—580: golde *geweorðod*.

NPM. (1):—36: swæfon seledreamas since *berofene*.

ASN. (1):—372: *geteled* rime.

## DANIEL (13).

### A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (5).

#### I. WITHOUT OBJECT (3).

NSM. (2):—687: *hamsittende* (or attrib.?): 573: *lifgende*.

NPM. (1):—296<sup>2</sup>: *lifgende*.

#### II. WITH OBJECT (2).

NSM. (2):—355: ðær ða dædhwatan geond ðone ofen eodon ȝ se engel mid, feorh *nerigende*; 396: ðec . . . gastas lofiað liffrean, lean *sellende* eallum . . . [defective MS.] ece drihten.

### B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (8).

#### I. WITHOUT OBJECT (1).

ASM. (1):—521: *gesæledne*.

#### II. WITH OBJECT (7).

NSM. (3):—736: drihtne *gecoren*; 184<sup>2</sup>: mode *gefrecnod*; 184<sup>1</sup>: mane *gemenged*.

NSN. (1):—556: treow . . . telgum *besnæded*.

NPM. (3):—296<sup>1</sup>: lige *belegde*; 92: metode *gecorene*; 259: aldre *generede*.

*Note.*—Spaeth considers 696 (Sæton him æt wine wealle *belocene*) as appositive, but the participle is rather predicative after *sæton*.

### CYNEWULF'S CHRIST (65).

#### A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (14).

##### I. WITHOUT OBJECT (13).

NSM. (3):—176: Hwæt bemurnest þu, cleopast *ceari-gende?*—Other examples:—426: *forðgongende*; 1324: *unscomiende*.

NSF. (4):—1160: Hell eac ongeat *scyldwreccende* ðæt etc.; 1016: *sorgende*; 1584: *scriðende*; 288: *ðristhygende*.

NPM. (4):—950: *brecende*; 387: *bremende*; 90: *geomrende*; 992: *wanende*.

DPM. (1): 1266: *sorgendum*.

ASM. (1):—1391: ða ic ðe on ða fægran foldan gesette to neotenne neorxnawonges beorhtne blædwelan, bleom *scinende*.

##### II. WITH OBJECT (1).

NPM. (1):—1271: on ðam hi awo sculon wræc *winnende* wærgðu dreogan. [Grein<sup>1</sup> and Gollancz<sup>1 & 2</sup> write as a compound, *wræcwinnende*.]

#### B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (51).

##### I. WITHOUT OBJECT (15).

NSM. (2):—475: acwæð Waldend engla, *gefysed*, Frea mihtig, to Fæder rice; 970: Grornað *gesargad* eal mid-dangeard (but Hertel considers it predicative after an intransitive verb).

NSF. (3):—1065: *aræred*; 1087: *biseon* (or pred.); 380: *geblissad*.

NSN. (2):—218: *acenned*; 961: *gesargad*.

NPM. (3):—1229: *arasode*; 1298<sup>1</sup>: *ascamode*; 1274: *fordone*.

NPN. (2):—1223: Ðonne beoð gesomnad ða clænan folc . . . *gccorene* bi cystum; 1071; Ðonne weoroda mæst fore Waldende, ece and edgeong, ondweard gæð, neode ond nyde bi noman *gehatne* (may be masc., as Cook gives it).

GPM. (1):—179: Ne ic culpan in ðe, incan ænigne æfre onfunde, womma *geworhtra*.

ASN. (1):—890: mon mæg sorgende folc gehyran, hyge-geomor, hearde *gefysed*, cearum cwiðende cwicra gewyrhtu, forhte afærde.

APN. (1):—892: *afærde* (quoted under ASN. 889 above).

## II. WITH OBJECT (36).

NSM. (6):—625: ond to ðære ilcan scealt eft geweorðan wurmum *aweallen*.—Other examples:—725: claðum *be-wunden* (or pred. ?); 1407: *bidæled* dugeðum ond dreamum; 1432: mane —; 1206: deaðfirenum *forden*; 10:5 monnum *sended*.

NSF. (4):—192: ðonne sceal Dauides dohtor sweltan, stanum *astyrfed*.—Other examples:—1085: blode *bestemed* (or pred. ?); 908: *gebleod* wundrum; 292: beaga *hroden*.

NS. N. or M. (1):—1139: ðæs temples segl, wundorbleom *geworht* to wlite ðæs huses, sylf slat on tu.

NPM. (21):—940: steorran swa some stredað of heofone, ðurh ða strongan lyft stormum *abeatne*.—Other examples:—1525: rædum *birofene*; 1519: willum *biscyrede*; 1643<sup>2</sup>: sorgum *biwerede*; 1643<sup>1</sup>: sibbum *bisweðede*; 831: wælmum *biwrecene*; 1642: leohte *biwundne*; 1103: firenum *fordone*; 1356: adle *gebundne*; 1538: lege *gebundne*; 993: hreowum *gedreahte*; 1298<sup>2</sup>: scondum —; 1508: drynces —; 1644<sup>1</sup>: dreamum *gedyrde*; 393: swegle *gehyrste*; 1644<sup>2</sup>: Dryhtne *gelyfde*; 149: suslum *geslæhte*; 385: dome *geswiðde*; 986: sundes *getwæfde*; 1509: ðurste *geðegede*; 447: hræglum *gewerede*.

GSM. (1):—20: Eadga us siges oðrum *forwyrned*, wlitigan wilsides, gif his weorc ne deag.

DPM. (1):—151: bring us hælolif wergum wite-ðeowum, wope *forcymenum*.

ASF. (1):—120: Nu we hyhtfulle hælo gelyfað ðurh ðæt Word Godes weorodum-*brungen*.

APM. (1):—873: slæpe *gebundne*.

*Note.*—In 891 (mon mæg sorgende folc gehyran, hyge-geomor, hearde gefysed, cearum *cwiðende* cwicra gewyrhtu), Hertel considers *cwiðende* appositive, but to me it seems to be used predicatively as a second accusative.

## ELENE (26).

### A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (9).

#### I. WITHOUT OBJECT (7).

NSM. (3):—352: swa hit eft be eow Essaias . . . wordum mælde, *deophyeggende* ðurh dryhtnes gast; *ib.* 881; 951: *wiðerhyggende*.

NSF. (1):—449: Ne mæg . . . Ebrea ðeod *rædðeahtende* rice healdan.

NPF. (1):—906: sawla ne moton *manfremmende* in minum leng æhtum wunigan.

DSM. (1):—810: Sie ðe, mægena god, *ðrymsittendum* ðanc butan ende.

ASM. (1):—795: Forlæt nu . . . wynsumne up under radores ryne rec astigan *lyftlacende*.

#### II. WITH OBJECT (2).

GPM. (1):—1096: Ða se halga . . . eode gumena ðreate god *hergendra*.

DPM. (1):—1220: Ða eallum bebed on ðam gumrice god *hergendum*, werum and wifum, ðæt etc. (Schürmann: substantivized).



## B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (17).

## I. WITHOUT OBJECT (3).

NSN. (1):—1226 : *mærost beama, ðara ðe of eorðan up aweoxe geloden under leafum.*

GPM. (1):—992 : *Næs ða fricgendra under goldhoman gad in burgum feorran geferede* [Sievers as quoted by Wülker: *gefereðra?*].

ASM. (1):—529 : *mec fæder min . . . unweaxenne wordum lærde.*

## II. WITH OBJECT (14).

NSM. (6):—697 : *cleopigan ongan sarum besyled.*—Other examples:—932 : *sarum forsoht*; 1128 : *egesan geaclod*; 720 : *hungre gehyned*; 1263 : *wirum gewlenced*; 1094 : *breostum onbryrðed.*

NSF. (1):—331 : *on ðrymme bad . . . geatolic guðcwen golde gehyrsted.*

NSN. (2):—2 : *Ða wæs agangen geara hwyrftum tu hund 7 ðreo geteled rimes*; 634 : *geteled rime.*

NPM. (2):—766 : *dreogað deaðcwale in dracan fæðme ðeostrum forðylmed*; 263 : *hyrstum gewerede.*

NPN. (1):—883 : *leomu colodon ðreanedum beðeaht.*

GPN. (1):—1284 : *Sceall æghwylc . . . worda swa same wed gesyllan, eallra unsnyttro ær gespreccenra.*

ASM. (1):—1058 : *ðæt he gesette . . . Iudas ðam folce to bisceope . . . cræftum gecorene.*

*Note.*—Schürmann (p. 368) considers the following appositive, but I substantive:—279 : *meðelhegende*; 395 : *synwyr-cende*. On the other hand, as the statistics show, I have classified as appositive participles several words that he considers as substantives.

JULIANA (28).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (11).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (10).

NSM. (5):—68 : Ða reordode rices hyrde wið ðære fæmnan fæder frene mode *ðaraðhæbbende* ; 281 : *lyft-lacende* ; 137 : ðe ðu hæstlice *manfremmende* to me beotast (or subst. ?) ; 445 : sceal nu lange ofer ðis *scyldwyrcente* scame ðrowian ; 261 : *siðende*.

NSF. (1):—252 : *gleawhygcende*.

NSN. (1):—648 : ic leof weorud læran wille *æfrem-mende*, etc.

NPM. (1):—662 : *wæccende*.

DSF. (1):—196 : *wiðerhygcendre*.

ASM. (1):—435 : *ðrymsittendne* (cf. *Phoenix* 623).

II. WITH OBJECT (1).

GPM. (1):—6 : geat on græswong god *hergendra* hæðen hildfruma haligra blod ryhtfremmendra. [Gollancz has *god-hergend[r]a*, in which case we have a substantive.]

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (17).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (7).

NSM. (5):—411 : *acyrred* ; 320 : *afongen* ; 417 : *bifolen* ; 262<sup>1</sup> : *geðungen* ; 262<sup>2</sup> : *sended* (or pred., as Conradi holds ?).

GPN. (1):—686 : *witedra*.

ASM. (1):—617 : *awyrgedne*.

II. WITH OBJECT (10).

NSM. (4):—350 : facne *bifongen* ; 203 : niða *gebæded* ; *ib*. 462 ; 582 : yrre *gebolgen*.

NSF. (2):—241: heolstre *bihelmad*; 535: breostum *inbryrde*.

NPM. (4):—681: hroðra *bidæled* hyhta lease helle sohton.—Other examples:—486: beore *druncne*; 13: dædum *gedwolene*; 490: sarum *gesohte*.

### GUTHLAC (42).

#### A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (11).

##### I. WITHOUT OBJECT (10).

NSM. (1):—1085: lac onsægde *deophycgende* dryhtne to willan.

NPM. (7):—203: sceoldon wræcmægcas ofgiefan *gnornende* grene beorgas; *ib.* 651; 117: ðonan sið tugon, wide waðe wuldre bescyrede *lyftlacende*.—Other examples:—401: *mur-nende*; 828: *scudende*; 879: *wedende*; 635: *wiðerhygcende*.

NPF. (1):—1250: wyrta . . . *hunigflowende*.

GSM. (1):—1190: *neosendes*.

##### II. WITH OBJECT (1).

NSM. (1):—1029: ac he hate let torn ðoliende tearas geotan. [Furkert considers ðoliende predicative after *let*, but incorrectly I think. Cf. *Judith* 272.]

#### B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (31).

##### I. WITHOUT OBJECT (8).

NSM. (5):—911: Hreðer innan born *afysed* on forðsið.—Other examples:—1286: *aræred*; 662: *gegearwad*; 1287: *gesewen*; 913: *ungeblyged*.

NSN. (1):—1282: lic colode *belifd* under lyfte.

NPF. (1):—1249: wyrta *geblowene*.

NPN. (1):—1263: scadu sweðredon *tolysed* under lyfte.

## II. WITH OBJECT (23).

NSM. (8):—1127: *awrecen wælpilum*; 1260: . . . *wælstræ-lum*; 967: *flæsce bifongen*; 1143: *leana biloren*; 1004: *foldærne biðeaht*; 640: *attre geblonden*; 1126: *nearwum genæged*; 1274: *husle gereorded*.

NSF. (1):—1325:—*ðonne seo ðrag cymeð wefen wyrd-stafum* (or *pred.*?).

NSN. (1):—888: *him to honda hungre geðreatad fleag fugla cyn*.

NPM. (7):—116: *wuldre byscyrede*; 873: *dreamum bidro-rene*; 872: *hiwes binotene*; 1047: *wilna bisciredede*; 645: *wuldre biscyrede*; 858: *adle gebundne*; 1046: *ac in lige sceolon sorgwylmum soden sar wanian*.

NPN. (2):—930: *leomu hefegedon sarum gesohte*; *ib.* 1003.

ASM. (3):—1312: *life bilidenne*; 992: *is me . . . geðuht, ðæt ðe untrymnes adle gongum on ðisse nyhstan niht bysgade, sarbennum gesoht*; 1118: *feorhhord onleac searocægum gesoht*.

APM. (1):—740: *leohte geræhte*.

## RIDDLES (44).

## A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (8).

## I. WITHOUT OBJECT (8).

NSM. (4):—13. 14: *lifgende*; *ib.* 29. 9; 3. 8: *winnende*; 41. 107: *wrotende*.

NSN. (1):—49. 4: *sinc for secgum swigende cwæð*.

NS. F. or N. (1):—84. 5: *wiht . . . ferende*.

NPM. (1):—17. 6: *hi beoð swiððran ðonne ic ȝ mee slitende sona flymað*.

GSF. (1):—55. 5: *stondendre*.

## B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (36).

## I. WITHOUT OBJECT (9).

NSM. (4):—72. 12: *bunden*; 24. 16: *searosæled*; 2. 11: *sended*; 24. 15: *unbunden*.

NSF. (2):—21. 2: *gegyrwed*; 21. 1: *sceapen*.

NS. F. or N. (1):—24. 2: ic eom wrætlic wiht on gewin *sceapen*.

NSN. (1):—31. 2<sup>1</sup>: *bewunden*.

NPM. (1):—12. 6<sup>1</sup>: *gemædde*.

## II. WITH OBJECT (27).

NSM. (12):—28. 14: mægene *binumen*; 28. 13: *strengo bistolen*; 3. 9: holmmægne *biðeaht*; 18. 2: *gefylled dryht-gestreona* (or pred.?); 2. 10: holme *gehrefed*; 71. 8: *hringum gehyrsted*; 4. 66: meahtum *gemanad*; 41. 85: *gewefen wundorcræfte*; 91. 4: *hringum gyrded*; 5. 2: *hringum hæfted*; 11. 4: *yðum ðeaht*; *ib*. 17. 3.

NSF. (5):—27. 6: *sindrum begrunden*; 71. 1: *reade bewæfed* (or pred.?); 32. 20: *frætwed hyrstum*; 4. 22: *eare geblonden*; 32. 10: *gecoren cræftum*.

NSN. (2):—31. 3: *fyre gebysgad* (or pred.?); 31. 2<sup>2</sup>: *wedre gesomnad* (or pred.?).

NPM. (4):—14. 8: meahtum *aweachte*; 12. 6<sup>2</sup>: *mode bestolene*; 14. 7: *reafe birofene*; 12. 7: *dæde gedwolene*.

NPN. (1):—27. 14: wrætlic weorc smiða wire *bifongen*.

ASF. (1):—87. 2: wombe ðryðum *geðrungne*.

ASN. (2):—24. 8: *spilde geblonden*; 30. 3: *listum gegierwed*.

*Note 1.*—Two Latin appositive participles occur in the Riddles, but are not translated into Anglo-Saxon:—90. 4<sup>1 & 2</sup>: *Dum starem et mirarem, vidi gloriam magnam: duo lupi stantes et tertium tribul[antes] IIII pedes habebant, cum septem oculis videbant.*

*Note 2.*—The defective text precludes the classification of the following:—78. 7: *bewrigene*; 83. 3 and 4: *life bewunden*, *fyre gefælsad*; 84. 40: *wuldrum gewlitedag*.

## ANDREAS (33).

### A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (7).

#### I. WITHOUT OBJECT (4).

NSM. (3):—1557: *hean*, *hygegeomor*, *heofende spræc*; 378: *ænig ne wende*, *ðæt he lifgende land begete*; 59: *He ða wepende weregum tearum his sigedryhten sargan reorde, grette*.

GSM. (1):—528: *ðu cyninges eart ðegen . . . ðrymsittendes*.

#### II. WITH OBJECT (3).

NSM. (2):—570: *Æðelinge weox word 7 wisdom*, *ah he ðara wundra a dom agende dæl ænigne frætre ðeode beforan cyðde*; 300: *Him ða ofstlice Andreas wið wine ðearfende wordum mælde* (cf. Guthlac 1321, where *wineðearfende* is substantive).

DPF. (1):—491: *Ic wæs on gifeðe iu 7 nu syxtyne siðum on sæbate, mere hrerendum mundum freorig, eagorstreamas*.

### B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (26).

#### I. WITHOUT OBJECT (12).

NSM. (6):—78: *ðy læs ic lungre scyle ablended in burgum . . . leng ðrowian*.—Other examples:—1299: *awerged*; 267: *bewunden*; 1127: *gehæfted*; 436<sup>2</sup>: *geðreatod*; 436<sup>1</sup>: *geðyd*.

NSN. (1):—1529: *sund grunde onfeng deope gedrefed*.

NPM. (1):—665: *næs ðær folces ma . . . sinra leoda nemne ellefne orettmæcgas, geteled tireadige*.

GPM. (1):—24: *hie blod and fel, fira flæschoman feorran cumenra ðegon*.

ASM. (1):—1651: Ðær se ar godes anne gesette wisfæstne wer, . . . ȝ gehalgode . . . , Platan *nemned*.

ASF. (1):—646: ic on ðe sylfum soð oncnawe wisdomes gewit wundorcraefte, sigesped *geseald* (or fact.?).

APM. (1):—883: swylce we gesegon for suna meotudes . . . eowic standan, twelfe *getealde*, tireadige hæleð.

## II. WITH OBJECT (14).

NSM. (5):—309: ðæt ðu sæbeorgas secan woldes, mere-streama gemet, maðmum *bedæled*.—Other examples:—1314: duguðum *bereafod*; 413: billum *foregrunden*; 983: elne *gefyrðred*; 1313: myrce *gescyrded*.

NSN. (1):—772: morðre *bewunden*.

NPM. (4):—1631: witum *aspedde*; 1618: wuldre *bescyrede*; 1003: dreore *druncne*; 746: mode *gemyrde*.

DSM. (1):—487: ðæt ðu me getæhte . . . hu ðu wægflotan wære *bestemdon*, sæhengeste sund wisige.

ASF. (1):—675: he lungre ahof woðe . . . wean *onblonden*.

ASN. (1):—1035: gelædde . . . on frið dryhtnes tu ȝ hundteontig *geteled* rime (cf. *Andr.* 665 and *Elene* 2, 634).

APN. (1):—1046: weorod on wilsिð wolcnum *beðehte*.

*Note.*—The MS. is too defective to classify 1025: *gewyrht*.

## PHŒNIX (26).

### A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (4).

#### I. WITHOUT OBJECT (4).

NSM. (1):—368: forðon he *drusende* deað ne bisorgað.

NSF. (1):—502: ðonne ðeos woruld *scyldwyrccende* in scome byrneð.

GPM. (1):—178: ealra beama on eorðwege *uplædendra*.

DSM. (1):—623: ond ðe ðonc sy ðrymsittendum. Cf. *Summons to Prayer* 2: ðrymcyninge *thronum sedens*; and *ib.* 25: to ðeodne *thronum regenti*.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (22).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (7).

NSM. (3):—525: *afæred*; 180: *gescylded*; 160: *geðungen*.

NPM. (1):—592: *gebredade*.

NPF. (2):—226: *geclungne*; 541: *gecorene*.

ASN. (1):—274: *gefrætwed*.

II. WITH OBJECT (15).

NSM. (9):—535: *flæsce bifongen*; 306: *bregden feðrum*; 602: *brogden wundrum*; 140: *sælum geblissad*; 27: *wynnum geblowen*; 162: *wintrum gebysgad*; 486: *wæpnum geðryðed*; 551: *wuldre geweorðad*; 550: *breostum onbryrded*.

NSF. (1):—503: *ade onæled*.

NSN. (1):—62: *lyfte gebysgad*.

NPM. (1):—633: *manes amerede*.

ASF. (2):—170<sup>1 & 2</sup>: *biholene ȝ bihydde monegum*.

APM. (1):—488: *sawlum binumene*.

METRES OF BOETHIUS (13).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (6).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (6).

NSM. (1):—2. 2: *Hwæt ic lioða fela lustlice geo sang on sælum! nu sceal siofigende wope gewæged wreccea giomor singan sarcwidas* = Boeth.<sup>2</sup> 3. 2: *Carmina qui quondam studio florente peregi, flebilis in mæstos cogor inire modos*.

NSF. (3):—20. 221: *ðonne hio ymb hi selfe secende smeað*; *ib.* 20. 214; 20. 212: *hwærfeð ymbe hy selfe oft smeagende ymb etc.*

NSN. (1):—3. 4: *ðonne hit winnende his agen leoht anforlæteð*.



NPF. (1):—11. 34: Swa hæfð geheaðerod hefonrices weard mid his anwealde ealle gesceafta, ðæt hiora æghwile wið oðer winð, 7 ðeah *winnende* wreðiað fæste = Boeth.<sup>2</sup> 48. 3: Quod *pugnantia* semina fœdus perpetuum tenent.

## B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (7).

### I. WITHOUT OBJECT (4).

NSM. (1):—1. 82: *forðoht*.

NSF. (1):—6. 15: *geondstyred*.

NPM. (1):—25. 7: *ymbestandne* = Boeth.<sup>2</sup> 95. 2: *sæptos*.

APM. (1):—19. 4: *alæded* (perhaps should be *alædeð*, as Grein conjectures).

### II. WITH OBJECT (3).

NSM. (1):—2. 3: wope *gewæged* (see Latin under 2. 2 above).

NSN. (1):—3. 8: sorgum *geswenced*.

NPM. (1):—25. 6: golde *gegerede*.

## THE METRICAL PSALMS<sup>1</sup> (37).

### A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (17).

#### I. WITHOUT OBJECT (13).

NSM. (2):—50. 75 (Cot.): ðonne ic . . . ofer snawe self *scinende* ðinre sibbe lufan sona gemete = et super nivem dealbabor; 77. 65<sup>1</sup>: *slæpende* = *dormiens*.

NPM. (5):—50. 56 (Cot.): *cerrende* = o; 125. 5<sup>1 & 2</sup>: *gangende* 7 *ferende* georne wepað = *euntes* ibant et flebant; 146. 10: se ðe mete syleð manegum neatum, hrefnes briddum, ðonne heo *hropende* him cigeað to = Qui dat jumentis escam ipsorum, et pullis corvorum *invocantibus* eum; 113. 25: *lifigende* = qui *vivimus*.

DSN. (1):—82. 6: mid *eardiendum* folce in Tyrum = cum *habitantibus* Tyrum.

DPM. (1):—140. 6: mid mannum *manfremmendum* = cum hominibus *operantibus* iniquitatem.

ASN. (2):—140. 4: sete swæse geheald swylce, drihten, muðe minum (ne læt man sprecan) 7 æðele dor *ymbstandende*, ðæt on welerum wisdom healde = Pone, Domine, custodiam ori meo; et ostium *circumstantiæ* labiis meis; 57. 6: *yrnende* = *currens*.

APM. (2):—68. 25: *gramhicgende* = o; 123. 2: *lifigende* = *vivos*.

## II. WITH OBJECT (4).

NSM. (2):—104. 10: and him ða mid soðe sægde, *cweðende* = Et statuit . . . *dicens*; 105. 4: Gemune us, drihten, on modsefan forð *hycgende* folces ðines 7 us mid hælo her geneosa = Memento nostri, Domine, in beneplacito populi tui; visita nos in salutari tuo.

NPM. (1):—138. 17: Blodhreowe weras! ge bebugað me, ðe ðæt on geðohtum ðenceað *cweðende* = Viri sanguinum declinate a me; quia *dicitis* in cogitationibus vestris.

GSM. (1):—105. 17: Hi . . . ongunnan . . . onwendan heora wuldor on ðæne wyrsan had hæðenstyrces hig *etendes* = et mutaverunt gloriam suam in similitudinem *comedentis* foenum.

## B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (20).

### I. WITHOUT OBJECT (9).

NSM. (3):—115. 6: ðinre ðeowan sunu on ðe *acenned* = filius ancillæ tuæ; 148. 9: *alæded* = o; 50. 74: *geclænsod* = mundabor.

NSF. (2):—50. 127 (Cot.): hiorte *geclansod* = cor *contritum*; 143. 10: Ic . . . singe on psalterio, ðe him swynsað oft mid tyn strengum *getogen* hearpe = cantabo tibi; in psalterio decem chordarum psallam tibi.

NSN. (1):—128. 4: *afoften* = *evellatur*.

NPM. (1):—67. 24: *gegaderade* = *conjuncti*.

NPF. (1):—50. 145 (Cot.): *forgeofene* = o (or pred.?).

ASF. (1):—107. 9: Hwylc gelædeð me on lifes byrig  
fæste *getrymede* = *Quis deducet me in civitatem munitam*.

## II. WITH OBJECT (11).

NSM. (2):—77. 65<sup>2</sup>: wine *druncen* = *crapulatus a vino*;  
54. 24: bealuinwites fæcne *gefylled* = *dolosi*.

NSF. (1):—50. 128 (Cot.): hiorte . . . *geeadmeded* inge-  
ðancum = cor . . . *humiliatum*.

NPF. (1):—50. 51 (Cot.): ic . . . bidde ðæt me *forgefene*  
gastes wunde an forðgesceaft feran mote. [There is no  
Latin correspondence to this part of 50. 51, the verse being  
much amplified in the O. E. translation. Grein in Glossary  
sub v. *forgifan* says that *forgefene* is accusative absolute, and  
supplies *ic* as subject of *mote*. I translate as Dietrich (quoted  
by Grein): 'ut mihi condonata animi vulnera in abolitionem  
abire possint.']

NPN. (3):—106. 36: syððan greowan lungre land heora  
*aloden* wæstmum = *Et seminauerunt agros, et plantauerunt*  
*vineas, et fecerunt fructum nativitatis*; 148. 10: fugla cynn  
fiðerum *gescyryped* = *volucres pennatae* (may also be singu-  
lar); 67. 17: wærun cræta tyn ðusendo *geteled* rime =  
*currus Dei decem millibus multiplex*.

DSN. (1):—67. 26: on ðinum temple tidum *gehalgod*,  
ðæt ys on Hierusalem = a templo *sancto* tuo quod est in H.  
(or NSM.?).

ASF. (2):—59. 8: weallum *beworhte* = *munitam*; 131. 5:  
stowe drihtne *gecorene* = *locum Domino*.

APN. (1):—106. 32: He on westenne wynne streamas  
soðfæst sette, ðær he sarig folc *geðewde* ðurste ða blissade =  
*Quia posuit flumina in desertum, et exitus aquarum in*  
*situm*.

B.—MINOR POEMS.\*

AZARIAS (2).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (1).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (1).

NPM. (1):—16<sup>2</sup>: *lifigende*.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (1).

I. WITH OBJECT (1).

NPM. (1):—16<sup>1</sup>: *lege bilegde*.

CALENDAR OF SAINTS (4).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (4).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (2).

NSM. (2):—7: forðy se kalend us cymeð *geðincged* on ðam ylcan dæge; 164: ðætte Haligmonð heleðum *geðinged* fereð to folce.

II. WITH OBJECT (2).

NSM. (2):—142: wæstmum *hladen*; 205: forste *gefeterad* (may be acc.).

CHARMS (4).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (1).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (1).

NSM. (1):—I. 74: Ful æcer fodres fira cinne *beorht-blowende*, ðu gebletsod weorð.

\*The text of the *Ruin* is so defective that I have taken no account of this poem.

## B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (3).

## I. WITHOUT OBJECT (2).

ASN. (1):—I. 61: *heo si geborgen wið ealra bealwa gehwylc, ðara lyblaca geond land sawen.*

APN. (1):—I. 64: *ðæt awendan ne mæge word ðus gecwedenne.*

## II. WITH OBJECT (1).

NSM. (1):—VIII. 30: *Iohannes wuldre gewlitegod.*

CHRIST'S DESCENT INTO HELL, RESURRECTION,  
ASCENSION, AND APPEARANCE AT  
FINAL JUDGMENT (4).

## A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (4).

## I. WITHOUT OBJECT (1).

APM. (1):—81: *gebegeg.*

## II. WITH OBJECT (3).

NSM. (1):—172: *dome gewurðad.*

NSN. (2):—284: *wynnum bewunden*; 283: *gimmum gefrætewod.*

## CREED (1).

## A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (1).

## I. WITHOUT OBJECT (1).

ASM. (1):—10: *cyning, hider asendne.*

## DOOMSDAY (5).

## A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (3).

## I. WITHOUT OBJECT (2).

NSM. (1):—25<sup>1</sup>: *murenigende cwæð.*

NPM. (1):—231: *deriende gedwinað.*

II. WITH OBJECT (1).

NPN. (1):—112: *cumað hider ufon of heofone deað beacnigende tacen* = *signa minantia mortem* of Latin original.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (2).

I. WITH OBJECT (2).

NSM. (2):—290: *blostmum behangen*; 25<sup>2</sup>: *mode gedrefed*.

DREAM OF THE ROOD (Vercelli Text) (3).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (1).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (1).

NSM. (1):—24: *Hwæðre ic ðær licgende lange hwile beheold hreowcearig hælendes treow*.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (2).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (1).

DSN. (1):—49: *Eall ic wæs mid blode bestemed, begoten of ðæs guman sidan*.

II. WITH OBJECT (1).

ASN. (1):—5: *leohte bewunden*.

DURHAM (1).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (1).

I. WITH OBJECT (1).

NPN. (1):—19: *Eardiað . . . in ðem minstre unarimeda reliquia, monia wundrum gewurðad*.

**EADGAR (2).****A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (2).****I. WITH OBJECT (2).**

NSM. (1):—28 B: hama *bereafod*.

NSN. (1):—11 A: agangen wæs tynhund wintra *geteled* rimes.

**EADWEARD (2).****A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (2).****I. WITHOUT OBJECT (1).**

NSM. (1):—9: wel *geðungen*.

**II. WITH OBJECT (1).**

NSM. (1):—16: lande *bereafod*.

**FALLEN ANGELS (DIE KLAGEN DER GEFALLENEN ENGEL) (12).****A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (12).****I. WITHOUT OBJECT (3).**

NSM. (1):—181: *aworpen*.

NPM. (1):—308: *gefrætewod*.

ASF. (1):—341: Godes andsacan hweorfan geond helle, hate *onæled* ufan and utan.

**II. WITH OBJECT (9).**

NSM. (5):—186: goda *bedæled*; 122: duguðum *bedeled*; 121: wuldre *benemed*; 38: *gebunden* fyrclommum; 131: synnum *forwundod*.

NPM. (3):—344: dreamum *bedælde*; 52: susle *begrorene*; 343: wuldres *bescyrede*.

NPF. (1):—296: sorgum *bedælde*.

FATES OF MEN (3).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (1).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (1).

DSM. (1):—9: god ana wat, hwæt him *weaxendum*  
winter bringeð.

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (2).

I. WITH OBJECT (2).

NSM. (2):—55: dreamum *biscyred*; 20: mode *gebysgad*.

GLORIA (2).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (2).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (2).

NSM. (2):—10: *asyndrod*; 12: *gebletsod*.

GNOMIC VERSES (1).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (1).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT. (1).

NSM. (1):—II. 35: to ðæs oft cymeð deað *unðinged*.

HARROWING OF HELL (HÖLLENFAHRT  
CHRISTI) (2).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (2).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (2).

NSM. (1):—24: *hlyhhende* spræc.

NPM. (1):—91: mændon *murnende*.



**HUSBAND'S MESSAGE (2).****A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (2).****I. WITHOUT OBJECT (1).**

NSF. (1):—13: *ðæt ðu sinchroden sylf gemunde.*

**II. WITH OBJECT (1).**

NSM. (1):—39: *nyde gebæded* (MS. is defective).

**HYMN (1).****A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (1).****I. WITH OBJECT (1).**

NSM. (1):—43: *haliges gastes fegere gefelled.*

**INSCRIPTION ON CROSS AT BRUSSELS (2).****A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (1).****I. WITHOUT OBJECT (1).**

NSF. (1):—2<sup>1</sup>: *bær byfigende.*

**B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (1).****I. WITH OBJECT (1).**

NSF. (1):—2<sup>2</sup>: *blode bestemed.*

**JUDITH (9).****A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (1).****I. WITH OBJECT (1).**

NPM. (1):—272: *Hi ða somod ealle ongunnon cohhetan, cirman hlude ȝ gristbitian gode orfeorme, mid toðon torn*

*ðoligende*. [Cf. *Guthlac* 1029: torn *ðoliende*; and *Psalm* 111<sup>9</sup>: torn toðum *ðolian* = *dentibus fremere*.]

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (8).

I. WITH OBJECT (8).

NSM. (2):—67: wine swa *druncen*; 118: *ðystrum forðylmed*.

NSF. (2):—171: golde *gefrætewod*; 129: *ðeawum ge-ðungen*.

ASF. (2):—36: beagum *gehlæste*; 37: hringum *gehrodene*.

ASN. (1):—329: golde *gefrætewod*.

APF. (1):—339: *gerenode* golde.

*Note*.—A. Müller considers *ðearffendre* in 85 (*ic ðe . . . biddan wylle mittse ðinre me ðearffendre*) and *geweorðod* in 299 (*Him on laste for sweot Ebrea sigore geweorðod*) appositive; they may be, but to me the former seems attributive and the latter predicative.

MALDON (1).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (1).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (1).

NPM. (1):—57: *ðæt ge mid urum sceattum to scype gangon unbefohtene* (or pred.?).

RUNESONG (2).

A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (2).

I. WITH OBJECT (2).

NS. F. or M. (1):—31: flor forste *geworuht*.

NSN. (1):—37: wyrtrumum *underwreðyd*.

**SALOMO AND SATURNUS (6).****A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (3).****I. WITHOUT OBJECT (3).**

NSM. (1):—105: *ðonne he hangiende helle wisceð.*

NPN. (1):—220: *aterrcynn, . . . ða ðe nu weallende ðurh attres oroð ingang rymað.*

ASF. (1):—447: *lifigende.*

**B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (3).****I. WITHOUT OBJECT (2).**

NSF. (1):—31: *gegoten.*

NSN. (1):—222: *gescæned.*

**II. WITH OBJECT (1).**

ASM. (1):—104: *heolstre behelmed.*

**SEAFARER (4).****A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (4).****I. WITHOUT AN OBJECT (1).**

NSM. (1):—106: *cymeð him se deað unðinged.*

**II. WITH AN OBJECT (3).**

NSM. (3):—16<sup>2</sup>: *winemægum bidroren*; 17: *bihongen hrimgicelum*; 16<sup>1</sup>: *wynnum biloren.*

**SOUL AND BODY (4).****A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (4).****I. WITHOUT OBJECT (1).**

NSM. (1):—46 (Verc.): *ic wæs gast. on ðe fram gode sended (or pred.?).*

## II. WITH OBJECT (3).

NSM. (2):—34 (Verc.): *flæsce befangen*; 67 (Verc.): *synnum gesargod*.

NSN. (1):—105 (Verc.): *dædum gedrefed*.

## SPIRIT OF MEN (4).

### A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (1).

#### I. WITH OBJECT (1).

NPM. (1):—82: we sculon a *hygende* hælo rædes gemunan in mode mæla gehwylcum ðone selestan sigora waldend.

### B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (3).

#### I. WITH OBJECT (3).

NSM. (3):—42: *ðrymme gebyrmed*; 41: wine *gewæged*; 43: *æfestum onæled*.

## SUMMONS TO PRAYER.

*Note.*—No example occurs in the Anglo-Saxon part of this poem, but two occur in the Latin, both with an object:—2: *Ðæne gemiltsað ðe . . . ðrymcyninge thronum sedens*; 25: *to ðeodne thronum regenti*. With both compare *Phoenix* 623: *ðrymsittendum*.

## WALDERE (1).

### A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (1).

#### I. WITH OBJECT (1).

NSF. (1):—B 19: *Standeð me her on eaxelum Ælfheres laf god and geapneb, golde geweorðod* (or pred.?).

**WANDERER (1).****A.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (1).****I. WITH OBJECT (1).**

NSM. (1):—20: eðle *bidæled*.

**WHALE (5).****A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (1).****I. WITHOUT OBJECT (1).**

NP. M. or N. (1):—32: bið . . . deofla wise, ðæt hi *drohtende* ðurh dyrne meaht duguðe beswicað.

**B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (4).****I. WITHOUT OBJECT (1).**

NSM. (1):—70: *gereiht* (but the passage is doubtful).

**II. WITH OBJECT (3).**

NSM. (1):—45: heoloðhelme *biðeahht*.

NSN. (1):—10: sondbeorgum *ymbseald*.

NPM. (1):—74: gyltum *gehrodene*.

**WIDSID (2).****A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (1).****I. WITHOUT OBJECT (1).**

NSM. (1):—39: ac Offa geslog ærest monna cniht *wesende* cynerica mæst (cf. *Beow.* 46, 372, 535, 1187; *Bede* 142. 8, 188. 1).

B.—THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE (1).

I. WITH OBJECT (1).

NSM. (1):—53: godes and yfles ðær ic cunnade enosle *bidæled*.

WONDERS OF CREATION (3).

A.—THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE (3).

I. WITHOUT OBJECT (1).

NSM. (1):—80: witan . . . oððe hwa ðæs leohtes *lond-buende* brucan mote.

II. WITH OBJECT (2).

NPM. (2):—14, 15: cuðon ryht sprecan, ðæt a *frigende* fira cynnes 7 *secgende* searoruna gespon a gemyndge mæst monna wiston.

*Note.*—*Bewriten* of line 19 should be *bewritan* or *bewriðan*, as several editors conjecture.

SYNOPTIC TABLE OF THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLES IN ANGLO-SAXON.  
I.—IN THE PROSE WORKS.

Work.	PRESENT PARTICIPLE.										PRÆTERITE PARTICIPLE.										Total of Pres. and of Præ. Pres.	
	Without Object.					With Object.					Total.	Without Object.					With Object.					
	Total.	N.	G.	D.	A.	Total.	N.	G.	D.	A.		Total.	N.	G.	D.	A.	Total.	N.	G.	D.		A.
Bede. <sup>1</sup> .....	107	93	73	1	8	11	14	11	1	2	73	60	40	...	13	13	5	2	3	3	180	
Boeth. <sup>1</sup> .....	17	17	17	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	10	10	6	3	...	...	...	...	...	...	27	
Greg. <sup>1</sup> .....	58	56	53	...	2	1	2	2	...	...	24	23	18	...	3	1	...	...	...	...	82	
Oros. <sup>1</sup> .....	16	14	12	...	2	2	...	...	...	...	5	5	3	...	1	...	...	...	...	...	21	
Ps. Th. <sup>1</sup> .....	20	7	7	...	...	...	13	13	...	...	4	4	4	...	3	...	...	...	...	...	24	
Chron. <sup>1</sup> .....	13	9	9	...	...	...	4	4	2	2	33	28	2	1	2	...	...	...	...	...	46	
Laws.....	4	3	...	...	...	3	1	1	...	...	15	15	9	1	4	1	...	...	...	...	19	
Benedict. <sup>1</sup> .....	63	25	25	...	...	...	38	38	...	...	9	8	8	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	72	
Bl. Hom. <sup>1</sup> .....	36	27	22	...	...	...	9	9	...	...	16	15	12	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	52	
Ælf. Hom. <sup>1</sup> .....	477	203	176	2	11	14	274	267	2	1	199	194	151	1	5	37	5	3	1	1	676	
Ælf. L. of S. <sup>1</sup> .....	335	129	117	...	5	7	206	200	1	3	208	205	154	...	21	30	3	1	...	2	543	
Ælf. de V. et N. Test. <sup>1</sup> .....	15	5	4	...	1	...	10	10	...	...	26	26	18	...	1	7	...	...	...	...	41	
Ælf. Hept. <sup>1</sup> .....	61	25	25	...	...	...	36	29	...	...	7	38	38	18	...	6	14	...	...	...	99	
Ælf. Hom. & L. of S. I. <sup>1</sup> .....	49	25	22	...	1	2	24	23	...	...	40	40	32	...	3	5	...	...	...	...	89	
A.-S. Hom. & L. of S. II. <sup>1</sup> .....	16	11	9	...	...	...	5	4	...	1	6	5	4	...	...	1	3	...	...	...	22	
Mat. <sup>1</sup> .....	67	26	22	...	2	2	41	38	...	...	13	10	6	...	...	1	3	...	...	3	80	
Gospels, { Mk. <sup>1</sup> .....	71	39	36	...	3	...	32	31	...	...	1	10	8	...	...	3	2	...	...	1	81	
{ Luke. <sup>1</sup> .....	91	49	42	2	3	2	42	38	...	3	1	20	18	13	...	...	5	2	...	1	111	
{ John. <sup>1</sup> .....	8	1	...	...	1	7	7	7	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	8	
Wulfst. <sup>1</sup> .....	9	3	3	...	...	...	6	6	...	...	19	15	9	...	...	...	6	4	...	...	28	
Benet. <sup>1</sup> .....	103	40	33	3	2	2	63	56	4	1	39	30	27	...	...	...	3	9	1	2	142	
Totals in the Prose Works..	1635	807	707	8	42	50	829	786	8	9	26	807	762	561	7	48	146	45	16	5	9	2443

## II.—IN THE POEMS.

Work.	PRESENT PARTICIPLE.										PRÆTERITE PARTICIPLE.										Total of Pres. and of Præt. Pres.	
	Without Object.					With Object.					Without Object.					With Object.						
	Total.	N.	G.	D.	A.	Total.	N.	G.	D.	A.	Total.	N.	G.	D.	A.	Total.	N.	G.	D.	A.		
Beowulf.....	23	19	13	2	4	4	4	...	...	...	68	18	16	...	1	1	50	41	...	...	9	91
Genesis.....	10	10	6	1	2	1	2	...	...	...	32	11	4	2	...	6	21	18	...	...	3	42
Exodus.....	3	3	3	...	...	...	2	...	...	...	9	3	1	...	...	2	6	5	...	...	1	12
Daniel.....	5	3	3	...	...	...	2	...	...	...	8	3	1	...	...	1	7	7	...	...	...	13
Cynewulf's Christ.....	14	13	11	...	...	...	1	...	...	...	51	15	12	1	...	2	36	32	1	1	...	65
Elene.....	9	7	5	...	...	...	1	...	...	...	17	3	1	...	...	1	14	12	1	...	2	26
Juliana.....	11	10	9	...	...	...	1	...	...	...	17	7	5	1	...	1	10	10	...	...	...	28
Guxlac.....	11	10	9	...	...	...	1	...	...	...	31	8	8	...	...	...	23	19	...	...	4	42
Riddles.....	8	8	7	...	...	...	1	...	...	...	36	9	9	...	...	.....	27	24	...	...	3	44
Andreas.....	7	4	3	...	...	...	3	...	...	...	26	12	7	...	...	3	14	10	...	...	1	33
Phoenix.....	4	4	3	...	...	...	2	...	...	...	7	4	3	...	...	1	15	12	...	...	3	26
Metres of Boethius.....	6	6	6	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	22	7	6	...	...	3	11	15	...	...	...	3
Metrical Psalms.....	17	13	7	...	...	...	4	...	...	...	20	9	8	...	...	1	11	7	...	...	1	37
Minor Poems.....	20	15	13	...	...	...	5	...	...	...	75	21	15	...	...	1	54	48	...	...	6	95
Totals in Poetry.....	148	125	96	5	11	13	23	18	3	2	419	128	96	6	2	24	291	248	2	3	38	567
Totals in Prose.....	1636	807	707	8	42	50	829	786	8	9	807	762	561	7	48	146	45	16	5	9	15	2443
Grand Totals.....	1784	932	803	13	53	63	852	804	11	11	1226	890	657	13	50	170	336	264	7	12	53	3010



## CHAPTER II.

USES OF THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE  
IN ANGLO-SAXON.

The uses of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon may be grouped under the three following larger heads:—

I. The Appositive Participle is equivalent to a Dependent Adjectival (Relative) Clause, and denotes either an action or a state, as in:—*Mk.* 3. 1: *ðar wæs an man forseruncene hand hæbbende* = *erat ibi homo habens manum aridam*; *Bede*<sup>1</sup> 246. 7: *sende . . . haligne wer ȝ in his ðeawum gemetfæstne ȝ in leornunge . . . wel gelæredne* = 194. 28: *misit . . . uirum sanctum, . . . scripturarum lectione sufficienter instructum*; *Beow.* 624: *ðæt hio Beowulfe, beaghroden cwen, mode geðungen medoful ætbær*; *Aelf. L. S.* 28. 58: *On ðam ylcan dæge com sum bisceop, helenus gehaten.*

II. The Appositive Participle is equivalent to a Dependent Adverbial (Conjunctive) Clause, and denotes time, manner, means, etc., as in:—*Bede* 8. 23<sup>b</sup>: *ða brynas . . . gebiddende adwæscte* = 37. 5: *incendia orando restinxerit*; *ib.* 10. 10: *þæt se ylca biscop geworden onbead* = 48. 1: *Ut idem episcopus factus mandarit*; *Beow.* 480: *Ful oft gebeotedon beore druncne ofer ealowæge oretmecgas.*

III. The Appositive Participle is substantially equivalent to an Independent Clause, and either (1) denotes an accompanying circumstance or (2) repeats the idea of the principal verb. Doubtless, as Gildersleeve holds (*Latin Grammar*, § 664, Remark 1), an ultimate analysis would show every participle to be dependent in nature; but the dependence here is so slight that it may be ignored. Certainly the function of the participles under this head is so radically

different from that of those under I. and II. as to demand separate consideration. Nor does the fact that in modern English we not infrequently retain the participle in our translation of (2) (cf. *Mat.* 13. 3) invalidate this classification. To define the class negatively: all appositive participles that are not equal to either a dependent adjectival or a dependent adverbial clause are considered as equal to an independent clause. This use of the participle is commonly recognized by Greek and Latin grammarians. Thus, in the remark just cited, Gildersleeve admits this use of the participle, although he objects to its being classed as co-ordinate: "It is sometimes convenient to translate a Participle Sentence by a co-ordinate clause, but the Participle itself is never co-ordinate, and such clauses are never equivalents." Goodwin also recognizes this use; in § 832-§ 844 of his *Moods and Tenses* he designates the relations expressed by his "Circumstantial Participle" as follows: (1) time, (2) means, (3) manner, (4) cause, (5) purpose, (6) condition, (7) concession, (8) "any attendant circumstance, the participle being merely descriptive;" (9) "that in which the action consists." His (8) and (9) cover exactly the ground of my "participle substantially equivalent to an independent clause;" and it seems to me that to give this use the name Co-ordinate is in the interest of simplicity. This modification made, Goodwin's "Circumstantial Participle" would tally perfectly with my "Participle equivalent to a dependent adverbial clause." Fay (*l. c.*) and Milroy (p. 16) explicitly state that the participle is occasionally equivalent to a co-ordinated finite verb. If I dwell on this co-ordinate use of the participle, it is because it has received but scant treatment in our standard English and German grammars (see March, § 459 (4), Mätzner, III, p. 70 (c), and von Jagemann, § 124, c), and is not mentioned in any of the dissertations on Anglo-Saxon or Germanic syntax that have come under my notice. Examples are as follows:—(1):—*Lk.* 4. 39: he *standende* ofer hig ðam before bebed = *stans super illam imperavit febrī*; *ib.* 10. 23: þa cwæp he to his

leorningnihtum *bewend* = *Et conversus* ad discipulos suos dixit;—*Aelf. L. S.* 146. 458: behyddon his . . . lichaman . . . *secgende*; *Mat.* 8. 25: hy awehton hyne ðus *cweðende* = *suscitaverunt eum dicentes*;—(2):—*Mat.* 11. 25: Se hælend cwæp *andswariende* = *respondens* Jesus dixit; *ib.* 13. 3: he spræc to hym fela on bigspellum, *cweðende* = *Et locutus est eis multa in parabolis, dicens*; *Aelf. L. S.* 80. 523: spræc mid . . . reorde god *herigende*.

The relative frequency of these three uses of the appositive participle—the adjectival, the adverbial, and the co-ordinate—may be gathered from these figures: of the adjectival there are about 1223 instances in all, 881 in the prose and 342 in the poetry; of the adverbial, about 897 instances, 691 in the prose and 206 in the poetry; of the co-ordinate, about 890 instances, 871 in the prose and 19 in the poetry. In all about 3010 examples of the appositive participle have been collected, of which 1784 are present and 1226 are preterite.

So much by way of general statement; let us now consider the three classes in detail.

## I. THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IS EQUIVALENT TO A DEPENDENT ADJECTIVAL (RELATIVE) CLAUSE.

As we have seen, the adjectival is the commonest use of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon, about 1223 examples occurring in all. Of this number 881 occur in the prose, and 342 in the poetry, in each distributed throughout all periods.

The adjectival use is found with both the present and the preterite participles, but is far more frequent with the latter than with the former. About 377 examples occur of the present participle, and about 846 of the preterite. Examples of each participle are given below.

The present participle, in this use, has the power of governing a direct object, but it occurs far more frequently

without an object than with one, especially in Early West Saxon and in the poetry, in the latter of which an object is almost unknown. In all we have 270 present participles without an object and 107 with an object. [See the discussion of the Governing Power of the Participle, in Chapter III.]

The past participle, too, can have an object (see Explanatory Note to Statistics), and in the poetry usually does; in prose the reverse is the case. Of the preterite participles used adjectivally, 609 have no object, of which 525 are found in the prose and 84 in the poetry; while 237 do have an object, of which 39 are from the prose and 198 from the poetry.

As stated in my Introduction, not a few scholars deny the adjectival use to the appositive participle, and class all participles that are equivalent to a relative clause as attributive. I have, however, already explained why I do not accept this view, and have shown that the meaning of the term appositive participle has been extended to include participles equal to relative clauses. Still other scholars admit that the participle equivalent to a relative clause may be used appositively, but only, they maintain, when the participle denotes an act (in the largest sense); that which denotes a state or condition being called attributive. It appears to me that, in so doing, these grammarians are confounding two distinct things, viz., the classification of the participle by its nature and the classification by its syntactical relationship,—a confusion that should be avoided. But I have not ignored the object at which these scholars aim, namely, sharply to discriminate between the participle that has strong verbal (assertive) power and the participle that has strong adjectival (descriptive) power; on the contrary, by arranging the whole of my statistics with reference to whether or not the participle is followed by an object, and by emphasizing the co-ordinate use of the participle, I have tried to segregate the more verbal from the less verbal participles to a degree not

attempted hitherto in Anglo-Saxon. To apply this principle to the matter in hand, the participle that is equivalent to an adjectival (relative) clause: the transitive participle with an object is manifestly nearer a verb than the participle without an object. Again, the preterite participle is more like an adjective than is the corresponding present participle. This will sufficiently explain the chief differences between my statistics and those of former investigators as to the adjectival use of the appositive participle.

The adjectival use occurs in most of the texts, prose and poetical, and I give a few examples here from the chief writers in prose and in poetry.

#### I. In Prose.

*Ælfred*.:—*Bede*<sup>1</sup> 8. 2: þæt P . . . wæs siended to *gelyfendum* Scottum on Crist = 28. 15: Ut . . . P. ad Scottos in Christum *credentes* missus est.—*Ib.* 78. 15: ðæt wiif in blodes flownesse *geseted* . . . meahte gebrinan = 55. 25: Si ergo in fluxu . . . *posita* . . . potuit tangere.—*Boeth.* 46. 27: Hwæt is heora nu to lafe, butan se lytla hlisa 7 se nama mid feaum stafum *awriten* ? = 47. 17: Signat superstes fama tenuis pauculis Inane nomen litteris.—*Greg.*<sup>1</sup> 155. 10: ðonne he ongiet be sumum ðingum oððe ðeawum utanne *ætiewdum* eall ðæt hie innan ðenceað = 112<sup>a</sup>: qui discussis quibusdam signis exterius *apparentibus* ita corda . . . penetrat etc.

*Ps. Th.*:—20. 3: ðu sendest his heafod kynegold, mid deorwyrðum gimum *astæned* = posuisti in capite ejus coronam de lapide pretioso.

*Chrcn.*:—755 F.: Sibertes broðer, Cynehard *gehaten*, ofsloh Cynewulf on Merantune.

*Laws*.:—*Ælfred*, c. 9, Title: Be bearneacnum wife *ofslægenum* [MS. B.: Be ðam ðæt man ofslea wif mid cilde].

*Bened.*<sup>1</sup>:—25. 16: and nu fram ðam englum us *betæhtum* ure weorc . . . beoð gebodude = 50. 13: et ab angelis nobis *deputatis* . . . opera nostra nuntiantur.

*Bl. Hom.* 11. 7: Arweorðian we Crist on binne *asetene*.

*Ælfric*:—*L. S.* 54. 83: gewendon to . . . byrig, Antiochia *geciged* (*sic!*).—*Ib.* 78. 494<sup>1 & 2</sup>: Effrem wæs gehaten sum swiðe halig abbod on wæstene *wunigende*, fela wundra *wyrcende*.

*Gosp.*:—*Mat.* 8. 9: Soðlice ic eom man under anwealde *gesett* = Nam et ego homo sum sub potestate *constitutus*.—*Ib.* 8. 17: ðæt wære gefylled ðæt gecweden is ðurh esaiam ðone witegan, ðus *cweðende* (*sic!*).—*Ib.* 11. 16: heo ys gelic *sittendum* cnapun on foretge = Similis est pueris *sedentibus* in foro.

*Wulfst.*:—46. 7: wa eow, . . . ðe leogað togædere hamas and æhta on unriht begytene on æghwilce healfe.—181. 29: ealle gemænelice, *gehadode* and læwede, bugon to gode georne.

## II. In Poetry.

*Beow.*:—777: ðær fram sylle abeag medubenc monig mine gefræge, golde *geregnad*.—*Ib.* 1645: þa com in gan ealdor ðegna, dædcene mon dome *gewurðad*.

*El.*:—331: ðær on ðrymme bad . . . geatolic guðcwen golde *gehyrsted* (or pred.?).—*Ib.* 352: Swa hit eft be eow Essaias witga for weorodum wordum mælde, *deophyeggende* ðurh dryhtnes gast.

*Gen.*:—725: hloh ða ȝ plegode boda bitre *gehugod*.—*Ib.* 1836: hwæt sie freondlufu ellðeodigra uncer twega, feorren *cumenra*.

## II. THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IS EQUIVALENT TO A DEPENDENT ADVERBIAL (CONJUNCTIVE) CLAUSE.

Of the adverbial use of the appositive participle I have found about 897 examples, 691 in the prose and 206 in the poetry.

The present participle occurs 538 times in this use, and the past participle 359 times.

Of the present participles 430 have no object and 108 have ; of the preterite participles 261 have no object, while 98 have.

In its adverbial use the appositive participle denotes subordinate relations of manner and means (combined here under the head of Modal), of time, of cause, of purpose, of concession, and of condition. Of course, these uses so interlap that at times the same participle can with propriety be put under several different heads. Where classification is so largely a matter of subjectivity, there must be much room for difference of opinion. I trust, however, that in the main my classification will justify itself to my readers. According to my estimate, the approximate number of each use is: Modal, 319 ; Temporal, 248 ; Causal, 228 ; Final, 40 ; Concessive, 33 ; Conditional, 29.

Let us look at each for a moment by itself.

### I. MODAL.

The Modal use of the appositive participle is far more frequent in Anglo-Saxon prose than in the poetry, 257 examples occurring in the former and 62 in the latter.

Of these 319 examples 254 are present and 65 are past.

An object is rarely used with the modal participle, only 16 occurring with the present participle and 22 with the preterite.

Though occurring in all periods of Anglo-Saxon, the modal participle is much more common in the works of Alfred than in those of any other author. In his *Bede* and his *Gregory* the construction is especially frequent, about one-third of all the examples being found in these two works. Here, as my statistics show, the Anglo-Saxon participle often translates a Latin gerund in the ablative ; and the frequency of the gerund in the two originals has doubtless caused the large number of modal participles in the two translations.

As stated above, the modal participle denotes both manner and means. It is not always easy to tell which notion

predominates, but the examples below will, it is hoped, sufficiently illustrate the two tendencies.

Some participles denoting manner, instead of being equivalent to a dependent adverbial clause, are practically equivalent to a simple adverb, as in: *Bede*<sup>1</sup> 86. 22<sup>a&b</sup>: *ðæt he wæccende ðohte ðæt he [no] weotende aræfnde* = 60. 28: *quia, quod cogitauit sciens, hoc pertulit nesciens*; *ib.* 38. 1: *þa . . . he ealle ða witu . . . geðyldelice 7 gefeonde abær* = 20. 1: *Qui . . . patienter hæc pro Domino, immo gaudenter ferebat*; *ib.* 310. 30: *þas we seondon arfæstlice fylgende 7 rihtwuldrende* = 239. 23: *Hos itaque sequentes nos pie atque orthodoxe*; *Ælf. Hom.* 1. 52<sup>b</sup>: *he for ðæm stænendum welwillende gebæd*; *Mat.* 5. 11: *secgeað ælc yfel ongen eow leogende for me* = *dixerint omne malum aduersum vos mentientes propter me*; etc., etc. Personally I believe it would be better to class such words as participial adverbs rather than adverbial participles; but, as I hesitate to set up new categories, in my statistics I have retained them under the ordinary rubric, save in one or two cases that could not be construed as participles, like *ðreagende* (*Greg.*<sup>1</sup> 159. 18, etc.: see *Statistics*). This use of the participle as an adverb, it is well known, is common in Greek (see Goodwin, *Greek Grammar*, § 1564) and in Latin (see Gildersleeve, *Latin Grammar*, § 325. 6). In Old High German it was so very frequent that there was developed a regular adverbial form of the participle in -o (O. Erdmann, *Syntax der Sprache Otfrids*, § 359; see below, Chapter v.). I have not, however, found this use of the participle treated in Koch, Mätzner, March, or in the dissertations on Old English syntax. There is perhaps a suggestion of it in Cosijn (II., p. 97), who writes of *Greg.*<sup>1</sup> 159. 18: "adverbialisch *ðreagende*?" Further illustrations are given under "(2) Manner" below.

### (1) *Means.*

#### I. In Prose.

*Ælfred*:—*Bede*<sup>1</sup> 22. 9: *þæt se b. ænne dumbne monn gebiddende gehælde* = 282. 30: *Ut episcopus mutum benedi-*



*cendo curauerit.* So *gebiddende* = *orando* in *Bede*<sup>1</sup> 22. 11, 22. 14, etc.—*Ib.* 72. 3<sup>a&b</sup>: *ðætte oft [seo cirice] ðæt wiðerworde yfel abeorende 7 ældend bewereð* = 51. 29: *ut sæpe malum quod aduersatur portando et dissimulando conpescat.*—*Greg.*<sup>1</sup> 53. 16: *Sua si micla cræftiga hiertende toscyfð & egesierende stierð ofermetta mid ðære tælinge his hieremonnum, ðæt he hie gebringe on life* = 30<sup>a</sup>: *Magnus enim regendi artifex favoribus impellit, terroribus retrahit: ut etc.*—*Ib.* 81. 10, 11: *ðæt is ðæt he sprecende bebiæt ðæt he ðæt wyrcende oðiewe, ðæt hit ðurh ðone fultum sie forðgenge* = 54<sup>a</sup>: *quia quod loquendo imperat, ostendendo adjuvat ut fiat.*—*Ib.* 127. 6, 7: *ðæt mod his hieremonna oliccende egesige & ðreatigende olicce* = 88<sup>b</sup>: *terrendo demulceat, et tamen ad terroris reverentiam demulcendo constringat.*—*Ib.* 225. 22: *ða monnðwærnesse ðe he ær ðurhtogen hæfde eft ðeahtigende on yfel gewend [Cotton MS.: gewent]* = 170<sup>b</sup>: *et mansuetudinem, quam tolerantes habuerunt, retractantes in malitiam vertunt.*

*Bened.*<sup>1</sup>:—2. 10: *nellen ge elciende eowere heortan ahyrdan* = 4. 15: *nolite obdurare corda vestra.*

*Bl. Hom.*:—89. 34<sup>a&b</sup>: *raðe he lifgende ut eode of his byrgenne mid his agenre mihte aweht.*

*Ælfric*:—*Hom.* 1. 226<sup>b</sup>: *Mare miht wæs, ðæt he ðone deað mid his æriste tobræc, ðonne he his lif geheolde, of ðære rode astigende.*—*Ib.*, II. 182<sup>a2</sup>: *ðone ðe B. na handlunge ac on-beseonde fram his bendum alysde.*

*Gosp.*:—*Lk.* 12. 25: *Hwylc eower mæg ðencende ican ane elne to his anlicnesse?* = *Quis autem vestrum cogitando potest adjicere ad staturam suam cubitum unum?*—*Mk.* 15. 30: *gehæl ðe sylfne of ðære rode stigende* = *Salvum fac temetipsum descendens de cruce.*

## II. In Poetry.

*El.*:—449: *Ne mæg æfre ofer ðæt Ebrea ðeod rædðeahtende rice healdan.* [May be adjectival, as Schürmann and Garnett hold.]

(2) *Manner.*

## I. In Prose.

*Ælfred* :—*Bede*<sup>1</sup> 72. 9 : ða ðe him ne ondrædað *wætonde* syngian = 52. 1 : qui non metuunt *sciendo* peccare.—*Ib.* 102. 21 : is sægd ðæt he *beotigende* forecwæde = 83. 27 : fertur *minitans* prædixisse.—*Boeth.*<sup>1</sup> 3. 7 : Hu B. hine *singende* gebæd, 7 his earfoðu to Gode mænde.—*Ib.* 9. 29 : Ongan ða giddien, 7 ðus *singende* cwæð.—*Ib.* 8. 15 : þa ic ða ðis leoð, cwæð B., *geomriende* asungen hæfde, ða com etc. = 4. 2 : Hæc dum mecum tacitus ipse reputarem *querimoni- amque lacrimabilem* stili officio signarem, adtittisse . . . uisa est mulier etc.—*Greg.*<sup>1</sup> 185. 9 : æresð mon sceal spreca *asciende*, suelce he be oðrum menn sprece & ascie = 138<sup>a</sup> : prius *per quasdam similitudines* velut de alieno negotio requirendi sunt.—*Ib.* 405. 31 : hi *ofermodgiende* his gebod forhogdon = *superbiens* ejus jussa contempsit.—*Ib.* 379. 23 : Hie sceoldon gehieran hu Essaias se witga *hreowsigende* hine selfne tælde = 294<sup>b</sup> : Audiant quod Isaias *magna voce pœnitentiæ* se ipse reprehendit.—*Ib.* 381. 25 : cwæð ðæt ða scolden bion synderlice Godes ðegnas, ða ðe *unwandiende* ðara scyldegena gyltas ofslogen = 296<sup>b</sup> : illos a parte Dei denuntiavit existere, qui delinquentium scelera *incunctanter* ferirent dicens (or adverb ?)—*Ib.* 117. 23 : Forðam we beoð mid Gode sua miele suiðor gebundne sua we for monnum orsorglicor *ungewitnode* syngiað = 82<sup>a</sup> : Tanto ergo apud Dominum obligatiores sumus, quanto apud homines *inulte* peccamus.

*Ælfrie* :—*Hom.* 1. 54<sup>b</sup> : ðæt ðu scealt *millsigende* forgifan.—*Ib.* 1. 340<sup>a1</sup> : he hit bær on his exlum to ðære eowde *blissigende*.

*Gosp.* :—*Mat.* 6. 5 : ða lufiað ðæt hig gebiddon hi *standende* on gesomnungum = qui amant in synagogis . . . *stantes* orare.—*Mk.* 5. 40 : inn-eodon *suwiende* ðar ðæt mæden wæs = *ingreditur* ubi puella erat jacens.—*Ib.* 9. 24 : *wepende* cwæð = *cum lacrymis* aiebat.—*Lk.* 22. 65 : manega oðre ðing hig him to cwædon *dysigende* = alia multa *blasphemantes* dicebant in eum.

## II. In Poetry.

*Beow.* 2062: him se oðer ðonan losað *wigende*, con him land geare. [If we adopt Heyne's *lifigende*, the participle is Final instead of Modal. See below under Final].—*Ib.* 2235: swa hy on geardagum gumena nathwyle eormenlafe æðelan cynnes ðanchyegende ðær gehydde.—*Ib.* 2595: niwan stefne nearo ðrowode fyre *befongen*, se ðe ær folce weold. [May be Adjectival, but is more probably Modal, as K. Köhler puts it.]

*Andr.* 1557: hean, hygegeomor, *heofende* spræc. [May be Adjectival.]

*Gen.* 1582: ac he *hlihende* broðrum sægde.

## II. TEMPORAL.

The second most frequent use of the adverbial appositive participle is to denote relations of time. If we use the term *temporal* in a very broad sense, no doubt a number of participles that I have put under other rubrics might be put here, since almost any participle may be looked upon as indicating after a fashion a time relationship. But I have classed as temporal only those participles in which the idea of time seems definite rather than general. Of the 248 temporal participles in Anglo-Saxon, 200 are found in the prose, and 48 in the poetry.

Of these participles 166 are in the present tense, and 82 in the preterite.

As with the modal participle, so here an object is rare; 28 occurring with the present participle and 10 with the preterite.

As my table shows, the temporal participle is sprinkled throughout the periods of Anglo-Saxon.

Examples follow:—

## I. In Prose.

*Ælfred*:—*Bede*<sup>1</sup> 214. 11: swa eft *onlysed* ðy lichamon byrneð = 166. 4: ita *solutus* corpore ardebit.—*Ib.* 264. 25:

song *ða ingongende ealle gefylde* = 208. 25: quod *ingressa* [= uox] totum impleuit.—*Ib.* 142. 8: sægde he *ðæt he hine* [*i. e., here, sanctuary*] *cneoh t weosende gesawe* (MS. Ca: *hine cuðe cniht wesende*) = 116. 12: se *in pueritia* uidisse testabatur.—*Greg.*<sup>1</sup> 93. 9: Hit is gecueden *ðæt se sacerd scolde sweltan, gif se sweg nære of him gehiered ægðer ge inngongendum ge utgongendum*, etc. = 62<sup>b</sup>: Sacerdos namque *ingrediens vel egrediens* moritur, si de eo sonitus non auditur.—*Ib.* 399. 14: Sio Segor gehælde Loth *fleondne* = 318<sup>a</sup>: Segor civitas, quæ *fugientem* salvet infirmum.

*Ælfrie*:—*Hom.* I. 232<sup>a</sup>: Crist ableow *ðone Halgan Gast ofer ða apostolas, ða-gyt wunigende on eorðan*.—*Ib.* II. 250<sup>b</sup> 2: Se H. *ða stod on ðam domerne gelædd*.

*Gosp.*:—*Mat.* 7. 6: hig *ðonne ongean gewende eow tosylton* = *conversi* dirumpant vos.—*Mk.* 15. 15: sealde him *ðone hælend beswungenne* = tradidit Jesum flagellis *cæsum* (or Adjectival?).

## II. In Poetry.

*Beow.*:—535: Wit *ðæt gecwædon cniht-wesende*.—*Ib.* 815: wæs gehwæðer oðrum *lifigende* lað.

*El.*:—529: Ðus mec fæder min on fyrndagum *unweaxenne* wordum lærde.

*Gen.*:—2169: ac ic ðe *lifigende* her wið weana gehwam wreo 7 scylde.

## III. CAUSAL.

Of the 228 Causal Participles, 157 belong to the prose and 71 to the poetry.

The present participle is found 56 times, the preterite 172 times.

An object occurs with the present participle in 23 instances, and with the preterite in 51 instances.

The causal use is pretty evenly distributed throughout the various prose and poetical texts.

Not a few of the examples are doubtful.

## I. In Prose.

*Ælfred*:—*Bede*<sup>1</sup> 8. 5: þæt Bryttas mid ðy mærran hungre *genedde* ða elreordian of heora gemærum adrifan = 29. 12: Ut Brettones fame famosa *coacti* barbaros suis e finibus pepulerint.—*Ib.* 62. 13: he ða *gefeonde* wæs gefulwod = 47. 22: *credens* baptizatus est.—*Ib.* 186. 31: ac heo swa *ondrædende* from him gewat = 151. 10: quin in tantum *timens* aufugit.

*Ælfric*:—*Hom.* 1. 380<sup>b2</sup>: he *feallende* tobærst on feower sticca.—*Ib.* 1. 594<sup>b1</sup>: Egeas *geæbyligd* het hine ahon.

*Gos.*:—*Mk.* 3. 5<sup>b</sup>: ofer hyra heortan blindnesse *geunret* cwæð = *contristatus* super cæcitate . . . dicit.—*Mat.* 14. 8: Ða cwæð heo fram hyre meder *gemyngod* = At illa *præmonita* a matre sua . . . inquit (or Temporal?).—*Ib.* 15. 31: swa ðæt ða mænegu wundredon *geseonde* dumbe sprecende etc. = Ita ut turbæ mirarentur *videntes* mutos loquentes.—*Lk.* 4. 28: Ða wurdon hig ealle on ðære gesamnunge mid yrrre gefylled, ðas ðing *gehyrende* = Et repleti sunt omnes in synagoga ira, hæc *audientes*.

## II. In Poetry.

*Andr.* 436: wæteregea sceal *geðyd* 7 *geðreatod* ðurh ðryð-cining, lagu lacende liðra wyrðan.—*Ib.* 746: oððe sel nyton mode *gemyrde*.

*El.* 1128: he ðan næglan onfeng egesan *geaclod* 7 ðære arwyrðan cwene brohte.

*Gen.* 1571: Swiðe on slæpe sefa nearwode, ðæt he ne mihte on gemynd *drepen* hine handum self mid hrægle wryon 7 sceome ðeccan.

## IV. FINAL.

The appositive participle denoting purpose is rare, only 40 examples having been found; 39 in the prose, and 1 in the poetry (doubtful).

This use is confined almost exclusively to the present participle; but one example occurs in the preterite (*Ælfr.* *Hom.* 1. 134<sup>b</sup>), and that is doubtful.

The final participle has an object oftener than not; of the 39 present participles 35 have an object. The single example of the preterite participle has no object.

A glance at the table will show that only three examples have been found in Early West Saxon: two in *Bede*, each answering to a Latin participle; and one in *Gregory*, corresponding to a Latin infinitive of purpose. Most of the examples occur in *Ælfric's Homilies* and in the *Gospels*.

Among the examples may be cited:—

### I. In Prose.

*Ælfred*:—*Bede*<sup>1</sup> 10. 7: bodode; 7 swa mid his lefnysse Godes word *bodigende* on Cent eode = 44. 25: sic Cantiam *prædicaturus* intrauerit (or Pred.?).—*Ib.* 276. 12: licode us efencuman æfter ðeawe arwyrðra rehta *smeagende* be ðam etc. = 215. 1: placuit conuenire nos, *tractaturos* de etc.—*Greg.*<sup>1</sup> 61. 3: Se læce . . . ðe gæð æfter oðra monna husum *læcnigende* = 36\*: percussum *mederi* properat.

*Bened.*<sup>1</sup> 135. 27: sume heora fnada and wrædas gemiccliað, idel lof fram mannum *begyende* = 232. 2: alii fimbrias et phylacteria sua magnificent, gloriam *captantes* ab hominibus.—*Ib.* 134. 13: Oðer cyn is muneca, ðe feor fram mannum gewitað ond westestowa and ælætu and anwunung gelufiað, *geefenlæcende* Elian = 231. 6: Secundum genus est eremitarum qui, procul ab hominibus recedentes, deserta loca et vastas solitudines sequi, atque habitare perhibenter, *ad imitationem* scilicet Eliæ.

*Ælfric*:—*Hom.* 1. 74<sup>a</sup>: Hi ða begen ðone apostol gesohton, his miltsunge *biddende*.—*Ib.* 1. 134<sup>b</sup>: gebrohte ðæt cild ðe heo acende, H. C., *gelacod* to ðam Godes temple (or adjectival?).—*Ib.* 1. 338<sup>b</sup>: “ðonne forlæt he ða nigon and hundnigontig on westene and gæð *secende* ðæt an ðe him losode” [or Pred.? Cf. *Mat.* 18. 12: gæð and secð = vadit quærere].

*Gosp.*:—*Mat.* 19. 3: þa genealæhton him to farisæi hyne *costnigende* 7 cwælon = Et accesserunt ad eum Pharisei *ten-*

*tantes* eum, et dicentes.—*Lk.* 2. 45 : hig gewendon to hierusalem hyne *secende* = regressi sunt in Jerusalem *requirentes* eum.—*J.* 6. 6 : ðæt he cwæð his *fandigende* = Hoc autem dicebat *tentans* eum. So *J.* 8. 6 : *fandiende*.

## II. In Poetry.

*Beow.* 2062 : if we read *lifigende* ; but we have the modal use if we read *wigende* (see above, under Modal).

*Dan.* 355 : wearð se hata lig todrifen 7 todwæsced, ðær ða dæhlhwaton geond ðone ofen eodon 7 se engel mid, feorh *nerigende*, se ðe ðær feorða wæs, Annanias 7 Azarias 7 Miscel (or pred.?).

## V. CONCESSIVE.

The concessive use of the appositive participle is somewhat rarer even than the final. 33 examples occur in all, 25 in the prose, and 8 in the poetry.

Of these 19 are in the present, and 14 in the past tense.

An object is very rare, only 4 occurring with each of the two participles.

As to its distribution, but three examples have been found in Early West Saxon, namely, one each in *Bede*, *Gregory*, and *Orosius*, the two first corresponding to Latin participles, and all being doubtful. Most of the instances are in the *Gospels*. One example occurs in each of these poems : *Beowulf*, *Elene*, *Genesis*, *Guthlac*, *Juliana*, and *Metres of Boethius*, and two in the *Phoenix*.

The following will serve as examples :—

## I. In Prose.

*Ælfred* :—*Bede*<sup>1</sup> 278. 18<sup>b</sup> : Gif he æne siþa onfongen, *haten* ham hweorfan, ne wille, etc. = 216. 16<sup>b</sup> : Quod si semel susceptus noluerit *inuitatus* redire, etc. [May be temporal, as Miller translates.]—*Greg.* 153. 1 : Ac monige scylda open-

lice *witene* beoð to forberanne = 110<sup>a</sup>: Nonnulla autem vel aperte *cognita*, mature toleranda sunt, etc. [May be adjectival.]—*Oros.* 250. 14: Æfter ðæm Germanie gesohton Agustus *ungeniedde* him to friðe. [May be modal.]

*Ælfrie*:—*Hom.* I. 596<sup>b 8</sup>: forðan ðe he ne geswicð soð to bodigenne, nu twegen dagas cucu *hangigende*.

*Gosp.*:—*Mat.* 13. 13<sup>a & b</sup>: forðam ic spece to him mid bigspellum, forðam ðe *lociende* hig ne geseoð 7 *gehyrende* hig ne gehyrað = quia *videntes* non videat, et *audientes* non audiunt. So: *Mk.* 4. 12<sup>a & b</sup>; *Lk.* 8. 10<sup>a & b</sup>.—*Lk.* 5. 5<sup>b</sup>: Eala bebeodend ealle niht *swincende* we naht ne gefengon = Præceptor, per totam noctem *laborantes*, nihil cepimus.—*Ib.* 6. 35: læne syllað nan ðing ðanum eft *gehihtende* = date, nihil inde *sperantes*.

## II. In Poetry.

*Beow.* 2350: for ðon he ær fela nearo *neðende* niða gedigde. [K. Köhler classes as modal, but Garnett translates as concessive.]

*Gen.* 2649: Me sægde ær ðæt wif hire wordum selfa *unfricendum*, ðæt etc.

*Guth.* 1260: Bad se ðe sceolde eadig on elne endedogor *awrecen* wælstrælum. [Furkert: Pred. after intransitive verb, but Gollancz translates as appositive and concessive.]

*Jul.* 241: Symle heo wuldorcýning herede æt heortan heofonrices god in ðam nydclafan, nergend fira, heolstre *bihelmad*.

*Phoenix*: 162: Ðonne waðum strong west gewiteð wintrum *gebysgad* fleogan feðrum snel —*Ib.* 368: Forðon he *drusende* deað ne bisorgað.

*Metres of Boeth.* 11. 34: Swa hæfð geheaðærod hefonrices weard mid his anwealde ealle gesceafta, ðæt hiora æghwile wið oðer winð, 7 ðeah *winnende* wreðiað fæste = 48. 3: Quod *pugnancia* semina foedus perpetuum tenent.



VI. *CONDITIONAL.*

Least frequent of all the adverbial uses of the appositive participle is the conditional. Of the 29 examples 13 are in the prose and 16 in the poetry.

The present participle is used 4 times, the preterite 25.

Twice the present participle has an object, and 11 times the preterite participle.

In Early West Saxon, I have found only 4 examples (1 in *Bede* and 3 in *Boethius*). Late West Saxon, also, has very few examples, there being one doubtful example in *Ælfric* and two in the *Gospels*. In the poetry are represented *Beowulf* (2), *Genesis* (3), *Exodus* (2), *Eadgar* (1), *Andreas* (3), *Elene* (2), *Riddles* (2), and *Metrical Psalms* (1).

As my quotations show, several of these examples are quite doubtful.

Typical examples are :—

## I. In Prose.

*Ælfred*:—*Bede*<sup>1</sup> 278. 18<sup>a</sup>: Gif he æne siða *onfongen* haten ham hweorfan [ne wille] = 216. 16<sup>a</sup>: Quod si semel *susceptus* noluerit inuitatus redire etc.—*Boeth.*<sup>1</sup> 30. 25, 26: Ac gif hi yfele sint 7 lytige ðonne sint hi ðe pliolican 7 geswincfulran *hæfd* ðonne *næfd*; forðæm yfele ðegnas bioð simle heora hlafordes fiend = 37. 47 f.: Qui si uitiosi moribus sint, pernicioſa domus sarcina et ipsi domino uehementer inimica.—*Ib.* 91. 8: Ne mæg ic nane cwuce wuht ongitan ðara ðe wite hwæt hit wille, oððe hwæt hit nylle, ðe *ungened* lyste forweorðan = 78. 45: nihil inuenio, quod *nullis* extra *cogentibus* abiciant manendi intentionem et ad interitum sponte festinent.

*Bened.*<sup>1</sup> 28. 2: *geneadod* to anre mile gange, gang willes twa = 54. 7: *angariati* milliario vadunt duo.—*Ib.* 28. 6.

*Gosp.*:—*Mk.* 7. 15: Nis nan ðing of ðam men *gangende* ðæt hine besmitan mæge = Nihil est extra hominem *introiens* in eum quod possit eum coinquinare. [May be adjectival or

temporal.]—*Ib.* 7. 18 : Ne ongyte ge ðæt eall ðæt utan cymð on ðone man *gangende* ne mæg hine besmitan? = Non intelligitis quia omne extrinsecus *introiens* etc. [May be temporal.]

## II. In Poetry.

*Be.w.* 1368, 1370 : ðeah ðe hæðstapa hundum *geswenced*, heorot hornum trum holtwudu sece, *feorran geflymed*, ær he feorh seleð.

*Gen.* 1263 : Siððan hundtwelftig *geteled* rime wintra on worulde wræce bisgedon fæge ðeoda. So *geteled* rime(s) : *Gen.* 1336, 2344 ; *Exod.* 372 ; *Andr.* 1035 ; *Eadgar* 11 ; *El.* 2 and 634 ; *Metr. Ps.* 67. 17.

*Exod.* 232 : Wæs on anra gehwam æðelan cynnes alesen under lindum leoda duguðe on folcgetæl fiftig cista ; hæfde cista gehwile cuðes werodes garberendra, guðfremmendra ·x· hund *geteled* tireadigra.

*Andr.* 883 : Swylce we gesegon for suna meotudes æðelum ecne eowic standan, twelfe *getealde*, tireadige hæleð.

*Riddles* 24. 15, 16 : Nelle ic *unbunden* ænigum hyran nymðe *searosæled*. Saga, hwæt ic hatte ! [24. 15 may be temporal.]

## III. THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IS SUBSTANTIALLY EQUIVALENT TO AN INDEPENDENT CLAUSE.

Of the 890 co-ordinate participles 871 are found in the prose, and 19 in the poetry.

The present participle occurs 869 times, and the preterite 21 times.

An object is found far more frequently with the co-ordinate than with the adjectival or the adverbial participle, there being 633 instances with the present, and 2 with the past participle.

The co-ordinate participle is very rare in Early West Saxon and in the poetry ; and whenever it occurs in the works of

*Ælfred*, it is in translation of a Latin appositive participle. It is very common in *Benedict*, in the works of *Ælfric*, in the *Gospels*, and in *Benet*.

I add a few examples to those already given in defining the co-ordinate use of the appositive participle. They are arranged under two heads: (1) the participle denotes an accompanying circumstance; (2) the participle repeats the idea of the principal verb. The former may conveniently be designated as the "circumstantial" participle in the narrower sense; the latter, as the "iterating" participle.

### (1) The "Circumstantial" Participle.

#### I. In Prose.

*Ælfred*.—*Bede*<sup>1</sup> 312. 23<sup>a & b</sup>: we wuldriað usserne Drihten swa swa ðas wuldredon, noht *toætecende* oððe onweg *ateonde* = 240. 18<sup>a & b</sup>: glorificamus Dominum sicut . . . , nihil *addentes* uel *subtrahentes*.—*Ib.* 312. 25, 27: ða ðe heo onfengon we eac swelce onfoð, *wuldriende* God Fæder 7 his Sunu = 240. 20, 21, 22: . . . *suscipimus, glorificantes* Deum et filium eius.—*Ib.* 332. 16: Forðon ðe in ðæm ilcan mynstre. . . Hereswið . . . *regollicum ðeodscipum underðeoded*, in ða tid baad ðone ecan sige = 253. 10: Nam H., . . . , *regularibus subdita disciplinis*; expectabat (doubtful).—Other examples:—*Bede* 10. 12: *biddende* = *petens*; 14. 4: *biddende* = *postulans*; 310. 1: *feohtende* = *compugnantes*; 438. 30: *sittende* = *residens*.—*Oros.*<sup>1</sup> 12. 32, 33: ðonne forð ðonan west *irnende* heo tolið on twa ymb an igland ðe mon hæst Mercen, 7 ðonan *bugende* ut on ðone Wendelsæ . . . ðæt seo ea bið flowende ofer eal Ægypta lond = 13. 20, 22: Ægyptus inferior . . . habet . . . *fluviumque Nilum, qui etc. . . . deinde diu ad occasum profluens, faciensque insulam nomine Mercen in media sui novissime ad septentrionem inflexus plana Ægypti rigat*.

*Chron.* 656 E (p. 33<sup>t</sup>): seo papa seonde ða his writ ðus *cwæðend* (or adjectival?). So 675 E (p. 35<sup>b</sup>).

*Bened.*<sup>1</sup> 30. 3: swigean *healdende* ne sprece oð ðæt he geah-sod sy = 56. 19: taciturnitatem *habens* usque ad interrogationem non loquatur.

*Ælfrie*:—*Hom.* 1. 48<sup>a</sup>: And gebigde his cneowu, mid micelre stemne *clypigende* etc.—*Ib.* 1. 62<sup>a</sup>: Iohannes beseah to heofonum, ðus *cweðende*.

*Gosp.*: *Mat.* 9. 29: Ða æthran he hyra eagena *cweðynde* = Tunc tetigit oculos eorum, *dicens*.—*Mk.* 1. 41: his hand aþenode 7 hina *æthrinende* [*MS.* Hatton: *æthrinede*] 7 ðus cwæð = extendit manum suam, et *tangens* eum, ait illi.

*Benet* 31. 16: mid ealre gehyrsumnessa hine sylfne ðeowde ealdre *geefenlæcende* drihtnes = omni obedientia se subdat majori, *immitans* dominum.

## II. In Poetry.

*Beow.* 916: Hwylum *flitende* fealwe stræte mearum mæton.

*Christ* 950: Ond on seofon healfa swogað windas, blawað *brecende* bearhtma mæste.—*Ib.* 1016: Forðon nis ænig wundor hu him woruldmonna seo unclæne gecynd cearam *sorgende* hearde ondrede ðonne etc. (or adjectival?)

*Metres of Bæth.* 20. 212: swa deð monnes saul hweole gelicost, hwærfeð ymbe hy selfe oft *smeagende* ymb ðas eorð-lican drihtnes gesceafta dagum 7 nihtum.—*Ib.* 20. 214, 221: *secende*.

*Met. Ps.* 50. 1. 56 (Cot.): Ac ðu synfulle simle lærdes, ðæt hio *cerrende* Criste herdon 7 hiom lif mid ðe langsum begeton.

### (2) The "Iterating" Participle.

#### I. In Prose.

*Ælfred*:—*Bede*<sup>1</sup> 330. 30: heo of eorðan *alæded* leorde ðy fifeoðan dæge etc. = 252. 20: de terris *ablata* transiuit.—*Ib.* 240. 26: wool . . . feor 7 wide *grimsigende* micle menigeo monna afylde 7 fornóm = 192. 4: longe lateque *desæuiens* . . . strauit.—*Ib.* 312. 2: æfter heora lare . . . geðwærelice

we gelyfað *ondeltende* 239. 24: iuxta doctrinam eorum *professi* credimus consonanter, et confitemur.—*Oros.*<sup>1</sup> 240. 9: *wepende* mænde ða unare.

*Chron.* 1083 E<sup>b</sup>: gyrne cleopdon to Gode his miltse *biddende* (or final?).

*Bened.*<sup>1</sup> 4. 10: Be ðæm ilican andgyte se hælend cwið on ðæm halgan godspelle ðus *clypiende* = 8. 16: Unde et Dominus in Evangelio ait.—*Ib.* 11. 8: hy ðeah *forhogiende* me forsawon = 18. 21: ipsi autem *contemnentes* spreverunt me (or modal?).

*Ælfrie*:—*Hom.* 1. 104<sup>b</sup>: ðæs Fæder stemn of heofenum hlude swegde, ðus *cwedende*.—*Ib.* 1. 294<sup>b</sup>: him to spræc ymbe Godes rice, samod mid him *reordigende*.

*Gosp.*:—*Mat.* 8. 31: ða deofla soðlice hyne bædon, ðus *cweðende* = Dæmones autem rogabant eum *dicentes*.—*Ib.* 9. 30: se h. bebead him *cweðende* = comminatus est illis Jesus, *dicens*.—*Ib.* 11. 25: Se h. cwæð *andswariende* = *respondens* Jesus dixit.—*Ib.* 12. 10: hi ahsudun hyne ðus *cweðende* = interrogabant eum, *dicentes*.—*Ib.* 13. 31: He rehte him ða gyt oðer big-spel, ðus *cweðende* = . . . proposuit eis, *dicens*.—*Mk.* 3. 11: ðus *cweðende* clypedon = clamabant *dicentes*.

*Wulfst.* 199. 15: be ðam awrat Iohannes on ðære bec, ðe man hat apocalipsin, ðus *cweðende*. So 201. 8.—*Ib.* 246. 11: swa se witega ðe lærð ðus *cweðende*: sepi aures tuas spinis.

*Benet.*<sup>1</sup> 30. 14: gewrit bebyt *secgende* = scriptura præcipit *dicens*.

## II. In Poetry.

*Andr.* 59: He ða *wepende* weregum tearum his sigedrihten sargan reorde, grette gumena brego geomran stefne.

*Christ* 387: Forðan hy, dædhwæte, dome geswiðde, ðæt soðfæste seraphinnes cynn, uppe mid englum a *bremende*, unaðreotendum ðrymmum singað. [Hertel: pred. after intransitive verb.]—*Ib.* 992: Wepað *wanende* wer gum

stefnum, heane, hygegeomre, hreowum gedreahte. [Hertel: attrib., but Gollancz: "weep and moan."]

*Guth.* 401: Bonan gnornedon, mændon *murnende*, ðæt etc. [May be adjectival or modal.].—*Ib.* 879: hwilum *wedende* swa wilde deor cirnðon on corðre.

*Jul.* 662: Wærlíc me ðinceð, ðæt ge *wæccende* wið hetendra hildewoman wearde healdan.

*Spirit of Men* 82: Forðon we sculon a *hygende* hælo rædes gemunan in mode mæle gehwylcum ðone selestan sigora waldend! Amen!

*Harrowing of Hell* 91: ðonne hy gehyrdon, hu we hreo-w[ige] [mændo]n *murnende* mæg burg usse. [May be adjectival or modal.]

*Met. Ps.* 104. 10: And him ða mid soðe sægde, *cweðende* = Et statuit illud Jacob in præceptum, et Israel in testamentum æternum, *dicens*.—*Ib.* 105. 4: Gemune us, drihten, on modsefan forð *hygende* folces ðines 7 us mid hælo her geneose = Memento nostri, Domine, in beneplacito populi tui; visita nos in salutari tuo.—*Ib.* 138. 17: Blodhreo-we was! ge bebugað me, ðe ðæt on geðohtum ðenceað *cweðende* = Viri sanguinum declinate a me; quia *dicitis* in cogitationibus vestris. [Cf. 104. 10: where *cweðende* = *dicens*.]—*Ib.* 146. 10: Se ðe mete syleð manegum neatum, hrefnes briddum, ðonne heo *hropende* him eigeað to, cuðes æses = Sui dat jumentis escam ipsorum, et pullis corvorum *invocantibus* eum.

#### NOTES.

1. *Present Participle in a Passive Sense*.—I have found no instance of the present participle used in a passive sense in Old English. [Cf. Kellner, *Syntax des Englischen Verbums*, p. 85 f.; Koch, II, p. 72; Mätzner, II, p. 56; Sweet, § 2312; and, for the Germanic languages in general, O. Erdmann, *Grundzüge*, I, § 132 f.; Falk and Torp, § 138, 1; and Grimm, IV, p. 68.]

2. *Passive Participle in an Active Sense*.—The preterite participle of intransitive verbs has an active sense, such as *cumen*, *forðfered*, etc.: *Bede*<sup>1</sup> 396. 20: in ðære he *forðfered* bebyrged beon sceolde = 228. 9: in quo *defunctus* condi deberet; *Ælf. L. S.* 462. 351: oððæt hi becomon to sumum ænlicum felda fægre *geblowen* (*sic!*); *Bl. Hom.* 87. 36: *befealden* to Hælendes cneowum, he cwæð; *Mat.* 7. 6: hig ðonne ongean *gewende* eow tosylton = *conversi* dirumpant vos. Cf. *bewend* in *Mk.* 5. 30; *L.* 7. 9, 10. 23, etc. Occasionally, too, the past participle of transitive verbs has an active sense: *Greg.*<sup>1</sup> 435. 1: gif hi færlecor syngoden *unbeðohte* = 360. 7: si in his sola *præcipitatione* cecidis-sent (or adverb?); *Ælf. L. S.* xxiv. 2: wæron twegen kyningas on crist *gelyfde*; *ib.*: xxv. 109, xxviii. 15, etc. (see Statistics); *Ælf. Hom.* i. 66. 12: ðonne færlice gewitt he of ðissere worulde, nacod and *forseyldigod*. But, as in High German (see Grimm as cited below), the use of the preterite participle in an active sense occurs usually, not when the participle is appositive, but when it is attributive or predicative, or has been substantivized; under one of which heads come most of the examples cited by Mätzner, March, Schrader, and Sohrauer. *Druncen* in *wine druncen* and in *beore druncen*, cited by Mätzner and by March as active, seems to me passive in sense. [See Kellner, *Syntax des Verbums*, p. 97 f.; Koch, II, p. 72; Mätzner, III, p. 93; March, § 455; Schrader, § 104; Sohrauer, p. 31; Sweet, § 2356; and, for Germanics, O. Erdmann, *Grundzüge* I., § 133; Falk and Torp, § 138, II; Grimm, IV., p. 73.]

3. *Supplementary Particles*.—Only slight use is made of supplementary particles, which serve the more clearly to indicate the relationship of the participial to the main clause. They seem to be confined to the late West Saxon prose. Examples: *swa swa*: *Ælf. L. S.* xxiii. B. 234: ongan he sworetan *swa swa* eallunga gewæcced on ðam oreðe belocen; *swa ðeah*: *Ælf. Hept.* Numb. 15. 44: Hig *swa ðeah* ablende

beotlice astigon = At illi contenebrati ascenderunt; *ib.* *Ælf. L. S.* xxxi. 42;—*swa-ðeah-hwæðere*: *Ælf. L. S.* xxiii. B. 285: ic eom synful wif, *swaðeahhwæðere* utan ymbseald mid ðam halgan fulluhte;—*swilce*: *Ælf. Hom.* i. 60<sup>b</sup>: Drusiana ða aras *swilce* of slæpe awreht; *ib.* *Ælf. L. S.* 158. 174, xxv. 513, xxx. 411, etc.;—*ða*: *Ælf. L. S.* xxiii. B. 587: Zosimus ða witodlice gehyrende ðæt . . . he hire to cwæð; *ib.* Mk. 8. 13;—*ðonne*: Mat. 7. 6: hig ðonne ongear gewende eow tosliton = et conversi dirumpunt; *ib.* *Ælf. Hom.* i. 38<sup>b</sup>; *Ælf. L. S.* xxiii. B. 115.—Mätzner (iii, pp. 73, 90) mentions only *swilce*.

4. *Pleonastic "and."*—As with the absolute participle (see *Absolute Participle in Anglo-Saxon*, p. 21) so with the appositive there is occasionally a pleonastic *and*: *Bede*<sup>1</sup> 450. 20; *Oros.*<sup>1</sup> 12. 32, 33; *Bl. Hom.* 243. 7; *Ælf. L. S.* xxiii. B. 542, 560, 588, etc., etc. The same is true of Gothic and of Old High German (Gering, p. 401).

I close this chapter with tables showing the distribution of the appositive participle in its several uses (adjectival, adverbial, and co-ordinate), in the whole of Anglo-Saxon Literature.



## SUMMARY OF USES.

## I.—IN THE PROSE WORKS.

	ADJECTI- VAL.	ADVERBIAL.										CO-ORDI- NATE.		Tot. Adv.	Tot. Co- ord.	Tot. No Obj.	Tot. W. Obj.
		Total.	Mod.		Temp.		Cause.		Fin.		Conc.						
			No Obj.	W. Obj.	No Obj.	W. Obj.	No Obj.	W. Obj.	No Obj.	W. Obj.	No Obj.	W. Obj.					
	No Obj.	W. Obj.	No Obj.	W. Obj.	No Obj.	W. Obj.	No Obj.	W. Obj.	No Obj.	W. Obj.	No Obj.	W. Obj.					
	15	3	48	2	22	1	3	1	1	1	1	4	6	18	79	10	14
Bede { Pres. ....	35	9	3	1	11	1	8	1	1	1	1	1	1	44	27	2	13
Boeth. { Pres. ....	17	2	12	...	1	1	1	...	...	...	...	...	...	2	14	1	...
Boeth. { Pres. ....	10	6	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	3	...	...	...	6	4	10	...
Greg. { Pres. ....	58	1	48	1	6	1	6	1	1	...	...	...	...	1	57	...	2
Greg. { Pres. ....	24	7	3	...	6	...	1	...	...	1	...	3	...	8	16	23	1
Oros. { Pres. ....	16	2	7	...	2	...	1	...	...	...	...	3	...	3	10	3	2
Oros. { Pres. ....	5	4	...	...	...	...	1	...	...	1	...	3	13	4	1	16	7
P's. Th. { Pres. ....	20	4	...	3	...	...	1	...	...	...	...	3	...	4	4	9	4
P's. Th. { Pres. ....	4	4	...	6	...	...	1	...	...	...	...	3	...	3	7	3	3
Chron. { Pres. ....	13	3	...	6	...	1	...	...	...	...	...	...	3	25	2	...	...
Chron. { Pres. ....	33	25	...	6	1	...	1	...	...	...	...	...	...	2	2	...	...
Laws { Pres. ....	4	2	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	13	2	...	...
Laws { Pres. ....	15	13	...	2	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	8	31	5	19	39	21
Bened. { Pres. ....	63	4	...	9	1	3	1	...	2	...	...	...	...	4	5	8	1
Bened. { Pres. ....	9	3	1	2	...	...	...	...	...	1	...	3	7	12	14	10	9
Bl. Hom. { Pres. ....	36	11	1	5	...	6	1	...	1	...	...	...	...	12	4	15	1
Bl. Hom. { Pres. ....	16	11	1	...	...	2	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	102	88	287	203
Ælf. Hom. { Pres. ....	477	80	32	4	20	2	11	4	1	...	...	5	229	199	55	5	194
Ælf. Hom. { Pres. ....	199	134	5	...	21	6	28	6	1	1	...	60	177	155	49	4	205
Ælf. L. S. { Pres. ....	335	40	15	...	9	6	4	33	...	...	...	4	1	2	2	11	5
Ælf. de V. { Pres. ....	15	2	...	...	1	...	...	...	...	...	...	2	...	20	4	2	26
et N. T. { Pres. ....	26	20	...	...	1	...	...	...	...	...	...	11	25	13	12	36	36
Ælf. Hept. { Pres. ....	61	3	10	6	...	4	...	...	1	1	...	...	...	30	8	25	38
A-S. Hom. { Pres. ....	38	30	1	1	...	...	7	...	...	2	...	9	16	16	8	25	24
& L. S. i. { Pres. ....	49	11	5	...	5	...	4	...	...	...	...	...	...	16	8	...	...
A-S. Hom. { Pres. ....	40	33	...	1	2	...	3	...	...	...	...	...	33	7	...	3	11
& L. S. ii. { Pres. ....	16	5	...	1	2	...	1	...	1	...	...	...	3	5	1	5	1
& L. S. ii. { Pres. ....	6	4	...	...	...	...	1	...	...	...	...	...	...	5	8	...	...

Gosp. <sup>1</sup> { Pres.....	237	24	20	14	1	15	10	2	4	...	11	9	1	2	...	49	75	44	69	124	115	122
Wulfst. { Pret.....	43	17	6	1	...	6	1	5	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	8	...	23	12	8	36	7
Benet <sup>1</sup> { Pres.....	19	12	4	1	...	...	...	2	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	...	5	2	2	5	3	6
Benet <sup>1</sup> { Pret.....	103	16	16	4	2	10	4	3	4	...	1	...	1	...	2	...	3	32	31	40	15	4
	39	15	8	1	1	8	...	3	...	...	...	1	...	2	...	...	...	23	16	...	30	9
Total Present.....	1636	222	95	212	13	108	28	30	21	4	34	12	8	2	2	217	633	317	463 <sup>1</sup>	850	807	829
Total Preterite.....	807	525	39	30	2	62	2	105	1	1	...	10	...	9	...	20	1	564	222 <sup>2</sup>	21	762	45
Total Pres. & Pret.....	2443	747	134	242	15	170	30	135	22	5	34	22	3	11	2	237	634	881	691	871	1569	874

## II.—IN THE POEMS.

*Longer Poems:*

Beow. { Pres..... { Pret.....	23 68 10	3 10 1	2 35 1	6 3 4	1 4 2	9 1 2	1 4 ...	3 2 ...	6 ... ...	... ... ...	... ... ...	... ... ...	1 ... ...	1 ... ...	1 ... ...	... ... ...	5 45 9	17 23 9	1 18 10	19 50 21	4 6 ...
Gen. { Pres..... { Pret.....	32 9 8	9 1 8	8 1 8	4 1 4	2 ... ...	1 ... ...	... ... ...	2 2 1	8 ... ...	... ... ...	... ... ...	... ... ...	... ... ...	3 ... ...	3 ... ...	... ... ...	17 15 3	9 3 4	... ... ...	11 3 ...	21 6 ...
Exod. { Pres..... { Pret.....	3 9 5	1 1 4	4 1 4	1 1 4	... ... ...	2 1 1	1 1 1	... ... ...	1 ... ...	... ... ...	... ... ...	... ... ...	... ... ...	1 ... ...	1 ... ...	... ... ...	5 2 4	2 3 4	... ... ...	3 3 ...	6 2 ...
Dan. { Pres..... { Pret.....	14 5 9	1 1 4	29 1 2	1 4 1	... ... ...	2 1 2	... ... ...	3 ... ...	2 ... ...	... ... ...	... ... ...	... ... ...	... ... ...	... ... ...	... ... ...	... ... ...	38 13 9	13 15 7	4 13 15	1 7 1	1 36 2
Christ. { Pres..... { Pret.....	50 7 2	9 2 6	9 2 6	1 4 1	... ... ...	2 1 2	... ... ...	3 ... ...	4 ... ...	... ... ...	... ... ...	... ... ...	1 ... ...	2 ... ...	2 ... ...	... ... ...	8 10 9	9 8 4	1 10 7	3 14 10	1 1 1
Elene { Pres..... { Pret.....	17 9 1	1 9 1	1 9 1	... ... ...	... ... ...	2 1 2	... ... ...	5 ... ...	1 ... ...	... ... ...	... ... ...	... ... ...	1 ... ...	1 ... ...	2 ... ...	... ... ...	16 15 5	4 4 2	10 8 2	1 23 8	1 1 1
Jul. { Pres..... { Pret.....	11 5 5	1 5 5	11 5 5	2 1 4	... ... ...	1 4 4	1 1 1	2 ... ...	9 ... ...	... ... ...	... ... ...	... ... ...	1 ... ...	2 ... ...	2 ... ...	... ... ...	31 5 8	5 8 3	... ... ...	8 9 4	27 3 3
Guð. { Pres..... { Pret.....	31 6 2	1 6 2	11 6 2	1 4 1	... ... ...	4 1 4	1 1 1	2 ... ...	9 ... ...	... ... ...	... ... ...	... ... ...	1 ... ...	2 ... ...	2 ... ...	... ... ...	16 10 3	10 10 3	1 ... ...	12 14 4	15 15 4
Rid. { Pres..... { Pret.....	8 36 7	... 25 1	... 25 1	1 2 1	... ... ...	4 1 1	... ... ...	... ... ...	... ... ...	... ... ...	... ... ...	... ... ...	... ... ...	... ... ...	... ... ...	... ... ...	31 5 8	5 8 3	... ... ...	8 9 4	27 3 3
Andr. { Pres..... { Pret.....	26 8 8	3 8 8	3 8 8	1 1 1	... ... ...	1 1 1	1 1 1	3 ... ...	2 ... ...	... ... ...	... ... ...	... ... ...	1 ... ...	2 ... ...	2 ... ...	... ... ...	16 10 3	10 10 3	1 ... ...	12 14 4	15 15 4
Phoen. { Pres..... { Pret.....	22 4 3	... 8 8	... 8 8	1 1 1	... ... ...	1 1 1	... ... ...	2 ... ...	3 ... ...	... ... ...	... ... ...	... ... ...	1 ... ...	2 ... ...	2 ... ...	... ... ...	12 10 3	10 10 3	1 ... ...	12 14 4	15 15 4
Metr. { Pres..... { Pret.....	6 17 1	6 17 1	6 17 1	3 2 1	... ... ...	1 1 1	... ... ...	1 ... ...	3 ... ...	... ... ...	... ... ...	... ... ...	1 ... ...	2 ... ...	2 ... ...	... ... ...	1 3 2	3 4 5	6 4 3	13 4 4	3 4 4
Boeth. { Pres..... { Pret.....	17 17 20	1 1 6	1 1 6	2 1 9	... ... ...	3 2 9	... ... ...	3 ... ...	1 ... ...	... ... ...	... ... ...	... ... ...	1 ... ...	2 ... ...	2 ... ...	... ... ...	15 3 5	3 4 5	5 9 9	4 4 4	11 4 4

<sup>1</sup>Without object, 368; with object, 101.<sup>2</sup>Without object, 217; with object, 5.



[illegible]

**Two in Lat.**

<sup>3</sup> Without object, 44; with object, 93.

<sup>2</sup> Without object, 62; with object, 7.

# SUMMARY OF USES. III.—IN THE PROSE AND IN THE POETRY.

	Total	ADJECTI- VAL.		ADVERBIAL.												Co-ORDI- NATE.				Tot. Co- ord.	Tot. No Obj.	Tot. W. Obj.
		No Obj.	W. Obj.	Mod.	Temp.	Cause.		Fin.		Conc.		Cond.		Tot. Adj.	Tot. Adv.							
						No Obj.	W. Obj.	No Obj.	W. Obj.	No Obj.	W. Obj.	No Obj.	W. Obj.									
Pres. in Prose.....	1636	222	95	212	13	108	28	30	21	4	34	12	3	2	2	633	317	469	850	807	829	
Pres. in Poetry.....	148	48	12	26	3	30	...	3	2	...	1	3	1	...	...	15	60	69	19	125	23	
Total Pres.....	1784	270	107	238	16	138	28	33	23	4	35	15	4	2	2	637	377	538	869	932	852	
Pret. in Prose.....	807	525	39	30	2	62	2	105	1	1	...	10	...	9	...	20	1	564	222	21	762	45
Pret. in Poetry.....	419	84	198	13	20	10	8	16	50	...	...	...	4	5	11	...	...	282	137	...	128	291
Total Pret.....	1226	609	237	43	22	72	10	121	51	1	...	10	4	14	11	20	1	846	359	21	890	336
Total Pres.....	1784	270	107	238	16	138	28	33	23	4	35	15	4	2	2	232	637	377	538	869	932	852
Total Pret.....	1226	609	237	43	22	72	10	121	51	1	...	10	4	14	11	20	1	846	359	21	890	336
Grand Total.....	3010	879	344	281	38	210	38	154	74	5	35	25	8	16	13	252	638	1223	897	890	1822	1188

## CHAPTER III.

ORIGIN OF THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN  
ANGLO-SAXON.

Is the appositive use of the participle a native English idiom, or is it borrowed from the Latin?

The only direct expressions that are known to me on this question are from Einkenkel and myself. In his *Mittelenglische Syntax* (Münster, 1887), p. 273, in treating the present participle, Einkenkel says: "Das Part. in appositiver Stellung (im Deutschen wiederzugeben durch Adjectiv-Satz) findet sich gelegentlich im A.E., häufiger im Afranz., ist jedoch wol in keinem Falle ein einheimisches Gewächs, sondern stammt aus dem Lat., wo die Construction eine ganz gewöhnliche ist. Die verbale Kraft, die das so verwendete lat. part. besitzt, zeigt sich im A.E. und Afranz." And in his chapter on English Syntax in Paul's *Grundriss*<sup>2</sup>, § 129<sup>a</sup>, he thus speaks of the preterite participle: "Zu erwähnen ist hier die schon im Altenglischen bekannte später zunehmende appositionelle Verwendung desselben, die vom Lateinischen hervorgerufen und später vom Altfranzösischen vielleicht auch vom Altnordischen unterstützt wird." Einkenkel, then, holds that the appositive use of both the present and the past participle in Anglo-Saxon is due to Latin influence.

Before reading Einkenkel's treatment I had come to the same general conclusion myself on noticing how sedulously Alfred avoided the use of the appositive participle in his translations from the Latin. And in my monograph on *The Absolute Participle in Anglo-Saxon* (p. 50), in treating of the stylistic effect of the participle in Anglo-Saxon, I incidentally recorded this belief: "Clearly relief was needed here [*i. e.*, from the

heaping up of co-ordinate finite verbs]; and it came through the adoption of the appositive participle from the Latin."

An indirect statement concerning the origin is this by Th. Müller (p. 250): "Doch ist hinzuzufügen, dass die Verwendung der Participien zur Satzverkürzung im Ags. eine ziemlich beschränkte ist, namentlich die Verwendung des absoluten Particips. . . . Im Englischen hat die Anwendung des Part. zur Satzverkürzung sehr an Umfang gewonnen, besonders durch Einwirkung des Französischen und Lateinischen . . . Im Ae. ist die Satzverkürzung durch das Particip. noch beschränkt und nicht viel ausgedehnter, als im Ags." A. Erdmann cautiously expresses himself as follows (p. 30): "However common this use [*i. e.*, the appositive] of the participle present, as shown in II: 1:0, undoubtedly is, still the general run of the language seems to be opposed to the too frequent recurrence of it. There are to be found in the *Gospels*, in spite of the general closeness of the translation, numerous instances of co-ordinate finite verbs or subordinate clauses substituted for Latin-Greek participles present. In many of these passages the English translation readmits the participle, conformably to the original text." Owen (p. 61) seems to consider the construction native to English, though somewhat influenced by the Latin; but, as his statement is indefinite, it need not be quoted.

The statements of both Einkenkel and myself were in the nature of the case incidental and general. May not the present detailed study of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon enable us to make definite statements with reference to at least several of the uses of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon? I believe it will; and I turn, therefore, to the consideration of the several distinctive uses of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon.

### I. THE ADJECTIVAL USE.

The appositive use of the present participle that is equivalent to a dependent adjectival (relative) clause, seems to have been largely due to Latin influence and never to have gained

a secure foothold in Anglo-Saxon, because, as my appended tables show:—(1) This use is rare in Early West Saxon. (2) In most of these Early West Saxon examples, the Anglo-Saxon participle is in direct translation of a Latin appositive participle. (3) The construction is rare, also, in the more original prose (the *Chronicle*, the *Laws*, and *Wulfstan*). (4) It is very rare, too, in the poetry; and most of these examples occur in poems known to be translations of Latin originals. (5) It is common in Ælfric, in the *Gospels*, and in *Benet*. Of the 13 examples in the *Heptateuch* all but 2 are translations from the Latin; of the 44 examples in the *Gospels* every participle except 1; and of the 32 in *Benet* all except 2. Despite this, it is possible that the appositive use of a few slightly verbal participles like *blissigende* and *gefeonde* (see *Bl. Hom.* 5. 8<sup>a & b</sup>, p. 186 above), and *libbende* and *liegende* (see *Laws*: Cnut II, c. 24, Intr.<sup>a & b</sup>, p. 181 above) may be the native extension of the attributive use of such participles in postposition, the apposition arising from the fact that we have a series of participles, some with modifiers. [See above pp. 149, 152, and below on the origin of the adjectival appositive preterite participle.]

Whether the foregoing be accepted or not, this much seems certain: the appositive present participle with a direct object is not native to English, a topic the treatment of which is deferred to the close of this chapter (p. 307).

On the contrary, the adjectival use of the appositive preterite participle is probably native; or, if first suggested by the Latin, was soon naturalized. To me this use seems merely the extension of the attributive use of the preterite participle in postposition (see pp. 149, 152 above) when there was a series of participles modifying a single noun, or when the participle had an object or a somewhat extended adverbial modifier; as in: *Ælf. Hept. (Exod. 12. 19)*: ne ete ge nan ðing onhafenes, ne utan *cymene* ne innan lande *geborene*; *ib.* 29. 23: Ðu nymst . . . anne holne hlaf mid ele *gesprengedne*; *Beow.* 1126: Gewiton him ða wigend wica neosian freondum *befeal-*



*len* Frysland geseon. This difference as to the origin of the appositive present and of the appositive preterite participle is not in reality so strange as may at first appear; for, as already stated in the Introduction, the preterite participle is much more adjectival in nature than is the present participle; and, as our statistics show, in Anglo-Saxon the appositive use of the participle (whether present or past, and in whatever function) is in keeping with this general principle: the construction is most frequent when the participle manifests most of its descriptive (adjectival) and least of its assertive (verbal) power.

Whatever the explanation, it is a fact that the adjectival use of the preterite appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon is far more common than that of the present participle, and it seems thoroughly naturalized, if not native. For our tables show (1) that the construction is common in Early West Saxon, in the more original prose works, and in the poetry, as well as in Ælfric, the *Gospels*, and *Benet*; and (2) that in the translations, notably in the *Heptateuch*, a considerable fraction of the appositive preterite participles used adjectivally are not translations of Latin participles.

The same distinction between the appositive present and the appositive preterite participle is found in the other Germanic languages (see chapter v).

## II. THE ADVERBIAL USE.

### 1. *Modal*.

#### (1) *Manner*.

The appositive use of the participle (present and past) denoting manner, was probably native to Anglo-Saxon; if not, it was certainly early naturalized. We find this use very often in Early West Saxon, often in Ælfric and the *Gospels*, and occasionally in the more original prose and in the poetry. Moreover, in the translations, the Anglo-Saxon participle

corresponds not only to Latin participles, but also to Latin prepositional phrases, to nouns in the ablative, to finite verbs, to adjectives, and to adverbs; while in not a few cases there is no Latin corresponding to the Anglo-Saxon participle. Nor is the participle denoting manner confined to the poems known to be translations; on the contrary, the largest number of examples in any single poem is found in *Beowulf*. Finally, it may be said that in this use the participle has but slight verbal power; and hence the fact that the construction was native to Anglo-Saxon (or, if this be not allowed, was early naturalized), is what we should expect after what has been said above concerning the lack of verbal power in the Anglo-Saxon participle.

## (2) Means.

The appositive use of the participle denoting means was in all probability not native to the English, but was borrowed from the Latin. It is found chiefly in the more direct translations and in the works of Ælfric, and in the former almost invariably corresponds to a Latin participle or to a Latin gerund in the ablative, in the majority of cases to the latter. It is practically unknown in the more original prose and in the poetry. Since the verbal power is more prominent in the participle denoting means than in that denoting manner, we need not be surprised at the difference in the origin (or the naturalness) of the two.

The modal participle in both of its uses has substantially the same history in the other Germanic languages (chapter v).

## 2. *Temporal.*

With the exception of a few slightly verbal participles like *being*, *living*, and *sleeping*, the temporal use of the appositive participle, strange as it may seem, can hardly have been a native idiom in Anglo-Saxon. When it occurs in the prose translations, it is with but a few exceptions a direct transla-

tion of a Latin appositive participle. Only two examples occur in the more original prose (*Laws*, 1 : *Ine* C. 35 : *Se ðe ðeof slihð, he mot aðe gecyðan, ðæt he hine fleondne for ðeof sloge* ; and *Wulfstan*, 1 : 295. 14 : *hi sculon fleonde on gefeohte beon ofslagene*). As to the poetry, most of the examples occur in the poems that rest upon Latin originals. 14 examples, however, occur in *Beowulf*, nine in the present and five in the preterite (*lifigende* : 815 and 1953 ; *unlifgendum* : 1389 ; *slæpende* : 1581 and 2219 ; *wesende* (usually in composition with *enih*t and *umbor*) : 46, 372, 535, 1187 ; *druncen* (in *beore* and *wine druncen*) : 480, 531, 1467 ; *forðgewitenum* : 1479, which may be adjectival ; and *fylle gef(r)ægnod* : 1333). But after all only five different words are involved ; these are often used adjectivally, and the temporal use here may be partly due to that fact.\* At any rate, the temporal use of the appositive participle can hardly be considered organic in a work showing only five words so used. Moreover, in Anglo-Saxon, time relations are normally denoted by a finite verb introduced by a subordinating conjunction, as is evidenced by its habitual rendering of the Latin temporal participle (see chapter iv).

In the other Germanic languages, also, the temporal use is restricted to participles of slightly verbal power, like *being*, *living*, *sleeping* (chapter v).

### 3. *Causal.*

The use of the appositive participle to denote cause seems, in the main, to be an imitation of the Latin. Few examples occur in Early West Saxon ; and the majority of these as of those in other translations correspond to Latin participles, though a few answer to substantives in the ablative or to adverbs. The construction is exceedingly rare in the more

\* Einkenkel (*Mittelengl. Syntax*, p. 279) derives the temporal use of the preterite appositive participle from the adjectival (relative) use of the same.

original prose, there being but two examples in the *Chronicle* (1087 E: *geseonde*, which has an object and is therefore to be excluded from consideration; 449 A: Hengest 7 Horsa from Wyrhtgeorne *gelaðode*, Bretta kyninge, gesohton Bretene (MS. E: *gelaðode* Wyrhtgeorn Angelcīn hider; MS. F: com Angelcynn to ðisum lande, *gelaðode* from Wyrhtgeorne cinge)) and two in Wulfstan (133. 5<sup>a</sup> & <sup>b</sup>: sculon eowre heortan eargjan swiðe and eowra feonda mægen strangjan ðearle, and ge *tofesede* swiðe *afirhte* oft litel werod ealhlice forbugað = 131. 23: et animam uestram tabescentem faciam, et persequuntur uos inimici uestri, et fugietis nullo persequente). In the poetry, but five examples occur with the present participle; two have an object (*Andreas* 1, and *Guðlac* 1) and are therefore not to be considered; while three occur in poems based on Latin originals (*Genesis* 2, *Exodus* 1). In all probability, then, the causal use of the present appositive participle is not native to Anglo-Saxon poetry. As to the past participle, as I have already said in a preceding chapter, many of the examples are doubtful and may be considered adjectival (relative). K. Köhler, for example, does not consider as causal any one of the nine examples that I have classed as such in *Beowulf*. Most of the other causal preterite participles in Anglo-Saxon poetry are in poems based on Latin originals; those in the prose have been discussed in the beginning of this paragraph.

It seems highly probable, therefore, that the causal use of the present participle in both prose and poetry is due to Latin influence; it seems probable that the causal use of the preterite participle is largely due to Latin influence, but that it is partly an extension of the adjectival use of the preterite participle, which latter has been shown to be so common in Anglo-Saxon. As is shown in chapter IV, the Latin causal participle is in Anglo-Saxon normally translated by a subordinated finite verb.

For the other Germanic languages, see chapter V.

4. *Final.*

The appositive participle denoting purpose is mainly from the Latin. But three examples occur in Early West Saxon, two corresponding to Latin participles and one to a Latin infinitive of purpose. No example has been found in the more original prose. The instances in the *Gospels* and in *Benet* correspond invariably to a Latin participle. The single example in the poetry (already quoted: *Dan.* 355: *nerigende*) is from a poem based on the Latin. A still further reason for considering the final use unoriginal is this: 35 of the 39 present participles have an object (see p. 307 below). But, as the statistics show that the final participle in Old English occurs, as in Latin (Gildersleeve, *Latin Grammar*, § 670, 3), chiefly after verbs of motion, it may well be that the very frequent predicative use of the participle in Anglo-Saxon after verbs of motion contributed somewhat to its appositive use to denote purpose.

See, further, chapters IV and V.

5. *Concessive.*

The concessive use of the appositive participle is likewise to be ascribed to Latin influence. Of the three examples found in Early West Saxon, two are direct translations of Latin participles; while the third (*ungeniedde* in *Oros.* 250. 14), though without a Latin correspondence in this particular instance, answers to (*non*)*coacti*, which occurs elsewhere in Alfred's Latin originals (as in *Bede*<sup>2</sup> 29. 12: *co-acti* = 8. 5: *genedde*). No instance of the concessive participle has been found in the more original prose. Each example in the *Gospels* is in translation of a Latin participle. Of the eight examples in the poems, that in *Beowulf* (2350: *nearo neðende*) is considered modal by K. Köhler; the other seven occur in poems known to be from Latin originals (one each in *Elene*, *Genesis*, *Guðlac*,

*Juliana, Metres of Boethius*; and two in the *Phoenix*). Moreover, the Boethius example translates a Latin participle.

Compare chapters IV and V.

## 6. Conditional.

The appositive participle denoting a condition is probably due to Latin influence. Four examples occur in Early West Saxon, of which one corresponds to a Latin appositive participle (*Bede* 278. 18<sup>a</sup>), one to a Latin absolute participle (*Boeth.* 91. 8), while two have no correspondents in Latin (*Boeth.* 30. 25, 26). Of the two examples in *Benedict*, one answers to a Latin participle, and one is without a correspondent. The two examples in the *Gospels* are translations of Latin participles, as are also the four in *Benet*. Only one example occurs in the remainder of Anglo-Saxon prose. Of the sixteen examples in the poetry, two are in *Beowulf* (1368: *geswenced*; 1370: *geflymed*), one in *Eadgar* (11 A: *geteled rimes*) three in *Genesis* (*geteled rime(s)* in 1263, 1336, and in 2344), two in *Exodus* 232: *geteled tireadigra*, 372: *geteled rime*), three in *Andreas* (309 (?): *maðmum bedæled*, 883: *twelfe getealde*, 1035: *geteled rime*), two in *Elene* (2: *geteled rimes*, 634: *geteled rime*), two in the *Riddles* (24. 15: *unbunden*, 24. 16: *searoscæled*), and one in the *Metrical Psalms* (67. 17: *geteled rime*)\*. In ten of these examples, however, the same word (*geteled* nine times, *getealde* once) is used; and, besides, the participle is not unmistakably conditional. From its frequent occurrence in Anglo-Saxon and its occasional employment in Old Saxon (*Heliand* 1251: *twelivi gitalda*), this seems to have been a favorite locution; but its use appears to have been phraseo-

\*The translation of this phrase by Grimm (*computati numero*, note to *Elene* 1035 in his *Andreas u. Elene*), by Grein (*gezählt der Zal nach*, in his *Glossary* sub v. *rim*), and by Kent (*the number told*, note to *Elene* 2) is, like the original, ambiguous, except that Kent does say that the participial phrase is used adverbially. Pratje (§ 158) considers the O. S. *gitalda* to be attributive.

logical rather than syntactical. The *Beowulf* examples, also, are doubtful. We know, too, that in Anglo-Saxon a condition is regularly denoted by a subordinated finite verb. I believe, therefore, that the use of the appositive participle to denote a condition is not a native English idiom, but was perhaps borrowed from the Latin.

See, too, chapters IV and V.

### III. THE CO-ORDINATE USE.

The co-ordinate participle, in both its "circumstantial" and its "iterating" uses, is a direct importation from the Latin. No clear example of the co-ordinate participle occurs in *Gregory*, and only sixteen examples in the remainder of Alfred's works, each time in direct translation of a Latin participle. Three examples occur in the *Chronicle* and five in *Wulfstan*, all present participles with an object, and all due to Latin influence (see p. 307 below). No example is found in the *Laws*. With about a dozen exceptions all the examples in *Benedict*, in the *Gospels*, and in *Benet* are translations of Latin participles. In the *Prose Psalms*, however, only one of the sixteen co-ordinate participles answers to a Latin participle; but thirteen are present participles with an object, and, therefore, cannot be native English (p. 307).

In the poems, only nineteen examples occur: one in *Beowulf* (916: *flitende*), one in *Andreas* (59: *wepende*), four in *Christ* (387: *bremende*, 992: *wanende*, 950: *brecende*, 1016: *sorgende*), two in *Guthlac* (401: *murnende*, 879: *wedende*), one in *Juliana* (662: *wæccende*), one in *Spirit of Men* (82: *hygende*), one in the *Harrowing of Hell* (91: *murnende*), three in the *Metres of Boethius* (20. 212: *smeagende*, 20. 214, 221: *secende*), and five in the *Metrical Psalms* (50. 56: *cerrende*, 104. 10: *cweðende* = *dicens*, 105. 4: *hygende*, 138. 17: *cweðende* = *dicitis*, 146. 10: *hropende* = *invocantibus*). With the exception of *Beow.* 916 (which may not be co-ordinate) and of *Spirit of Men* 82 (of which I do not know the source), all the examples are from

poems known to be based on Latin originals. Two of the examples are in direct translation of Latin participles (*Metr. Ps.* 104. 10: *cweðende* = *dicens*; 146. 10: *hropende* = *invocantibus*), to which may confidently be added a third (*Metr. Ps.* 138. 17: *cweðende*), though here answering to a finite verb, *dicitis*. Finally, the majority of the remaining examples (like *brecende*, *murnende*, *sorgende*, *wæccende*, *wanende*, *wedende*, and *wepende*) really waver between the co-ordinate use on the one hand and the adjectival and the modal on the other; indeed, *brecende*, *murnende*, *sorgende*, and *wanende* are expressly declared to be attributive by Hertel and by Furkert, and I have put them here despite their extreme doubtfulness merely to avoid the appearance of bending statistics to conformity with a theory. The few clear cases that remain of the co-ordinate use (like *cerrende*, *hycgende*, *secende*, and *smeagende*) may, I think, safely be attributed to Latin influence. The Latin co-ordinate participle is in Anglo-Saxon usually rendered by a co-ordinate finite verb (chapter iv).

The co-ordinate participle is likewise uncommon in the other Germanic languages (chapter v).

## THE GOVERNING POWER OF THE PARTICIPLE.

### 1. *The Present Participle.*

I conclude with a remark that applies equally to each of the three uses of the appositive participle: the present appositive participle with a direct object, no matter whether its use is adjectival, adverbial, or co-ordinate, is always in imitation of the Latin. For the Anglo-Saxon present participle, when used appositively, seems originally not to have had the power of governing a direct object in construction,—a fact not noticed hitherto so far as I am aware. This statement is substantiated, I believe, by the following considerations:—

1. Very few examples of a present participle having an object occur in Early West Saxon. Only eighteen examples



have been found in the works of Ælfred, distributed as follows: *Bede* 14, *Gregory* 2, *Orosius* 2.

2. With two exceptions each of these eighteen examples in Early West Saxon is a translation of a Latin appositive participle with a direct object. In one of the exceptional cases (*Greg.*<sup>1</sup> 171. 13: *lærende* (MS. C.: *beoð lærende*) = 126<sup>a</sup>: *praedicando*) the Anglo-Saxon participle translates a Latin gerund in the ablative; in the other (*Oros.*<sup>1</sup> 52. 27) the accusative seems to belong to the finite verb as well as to the participle (see Statistics).

3. In hundreds of instances the Early West Saxon translators (Ælfred and his helpers) clearly avoided turning the Latin participle with an object by an Anglo-Saxon participle with an object (see chapter IV).

4. An object is exceedingly rare in the more original prose works, there being but four examples in the *Chronicles*, one in the *Laws*, and six in *Wulfstan*; in all eleven instances.

5. In every one of these eleven examples the participle can be traced directly or indirectly to a Latin source. In the *Chronicle*, *biddende* (1083 E), *cweðende*, which occurs twice (656 E, 675 E, both already quoted above), and *geseonde* (1087 E), may be due to the Latin *petens*, *dicens*, and *videns*, which latter occur so often in the Vulgate *New Testament*, in Gregory's *Cura Pastoralis*, in Bede's *Historia Ecclesiastica*, and in other books that we may assume to have been in the hands of the compiler of MS. E., especially as this MS. is itself occasionally interlarded with Latin. Or, since it was written about 1121 (Plummer, II, § 26), the editor of E. could have borrowed these participles from the Anglo-Saxon *Gospels* or from the works of Ælfric, in both of which they abound. The single example in the *Laws* (Wihtr. C. 18: Preost hine clænsie sylfæs soð, in his halgum hrægle ætforan wiofode, ðus *cweðende*: "Ueritatem dico in Christo, non mentior") may confidently be ascribed to Latin influence, not only that it is *cweðende*, but that the participle is immediately followed by a quotation in Latin. As to *Wulfstan*, four of the examples

are *cweðende* (105. 30, 199. 15, 201. 8, 246. 11), which here as elsewhere is to be ascribed to Latin influence. *dicens* (*dicentes*) occurs five times in Wulfstan, though not in the above examples; twice it is translated by a co-ordinated finite (60. 14, 87. 15) and once by a subordinated finite verb (87. 18), and twice it is not translated at all (31. 32, 77. 3). Moreover, in two instances (201. 8, 246. 11) *cweðende* immediately precedes a quotation in Latin. The other two examples in Wulfstan (244. 7<sup>b</sup>: *gemende*, 278. 9: *ðancjende*: see Statistics) sound like translations from the ritual. Be this as it may, the participle may unhesitatingly be ascribed to Latin influence; for in Wulfstan there are interlarded with the Anglo-Saxon fourteen Latin present participles with an object.

6. Very few objects are found with the present participle in the poetry, only twenty-three in all, distributed as follows: *Beowulf* four (1227: dream *healdende*; 2106: *fela fricgende* (but K. Köhler considers *fela* an adverb); 2350: *nearo neðende*; 1829: *ðec hettende*, which may be substantival, as K. Köhler construes it), *Cynewulf's Christ* one (1271: *wræc winnende*, Grein<sup>1</sup> and Gollancz<sup>1 & 2</sup>: *wræcwinnende*), *Andreas* three (570: *dom agende*, 491: *mere hrerendum*, *mundum freorig*, 300: *wine ðearfende*), *Elene* two (1096: *god hergendra*, 1220: *god hergendum*), *Doomsday* one (112: *deað beacnigende tacen* = *signa minantia mortem*), *Judith* one (272: *mid toðon torn ðoligende*: cf. *Ps.* 111. 9: *torn toðum ðolian* = *dentibus fremere*), *Daniel* two (355: *feorh nerigende*, 396: *lean sellende*), *Guthlac* one (1029: *torn ðoliende*: cf. *Judith* 272), *Juliana* one (6: *god hergendra*: cf. *Elene* 1096, 1220), *Spirit of Men* one (82: *hygende hælo rædes*), *Wonders of Creation* two (14: *fricgende fira cynnes*, 15: *secgende searoruna gespon*), *Metrical Psalms* four (104. 10: *cweðende* = *dicens*; 138. 17: *cweðende* = *dicitis*; 105. 17: *hæðenstyrces hig etendes* = *in similitudinem comedentis fœnum*; 105. 4: *gemune us, drihten, on modsefan forð hygende folces ðines* = *memento nostri, Domine, in beneplacito populi tui*). Of

these twenty-three participles, three (*Doomsday* 112, *Metr. Ps.* 104. 10 and 105. 17) are direct translations of corresponding Latin participles with an object; and to this class we may add a fourth (*Metr. Ps.* 138. 17), for the *cweðende* here, though corresponding to *dicitis*, must be due to *dicens*, which occurs not infrequently in the Latin *Psalms*. But what about the remaining nineteen examples? In the first place it is to be noticed that, except in four instances (*Spirit of Men* 82, *Wonders of Creation* 14 and 15, and *Metr. Ps.* 105. 4), the object immediately precedes its participle; that, though they are not so printed in Grein-Wülker, possibly we have accusative compounds (except in *Beow.* 1829), which compounds are in the main descriptive epithets, as are the hyphenated accusative compounds. And an object in an accusative compound seems to me to stand on an entirely different footing from an object in construction (cf. Strong, Logeman, Wheeler, p. 334, and Storch, p. 25). The accusative compound is often made because the Anglo-Saxon had no single word for the idea to be expressed, as when the translator of the *Psalms* (81. 2) turns the Latin *peccator* by *syn-wyrcende*, etc. Oftener, perhaps, the compound is made for the sake of its picturesqueness; hence it is more frequent in poetry than in prose. That the participles which govern an object in composition do stand by themselves and that their governing an object in composition does not necessarily imply an antecedent power of governing an object in construction is attested, I think, by the fact that only one or two of the participles with an object in composition are found, also, with an object in construction. This principle by itself might account for most of the participles under consideration. But we see, further, that of these participles eleven occur in works known to be translations from the Greek or the Latin (*Andreas* 3, *Christ* 1, *Elene* 2, *Judith* 1, *Daniel* 2, *Guthlac* 1, *Juliana* 1), and the participles here may be due in part to the influence of the participles in the originals, even if at times, as in the two examples from the *Elene*, the Anglo-Saxon participles correspond, not to

Latin participles, but to Latin finite verbs. It will be observed, also, that in these eleven examples there are only eight different participles, the participle of *hergian* occurring three times and that of *ðolian* twice. As to the four participles with objects following in construction, I think that they must be ascribed to foreign influence, though I cannot definitely trace that influence in three of the examples, as I do not know the sources of the *Spirit of Men* and the *Wonders of Creation*. *Hycgende* of *Metr. Ps.* 105. 4 may safely be ascribed to the influence of the Latin participles of the *Psalter*, though none is found in the particular verse corresponding to this line.

7. An object is likewise rare in the other Germanic languages, especially in High German and in Old Saxon, as will be shown in chapter v.

8. The only fact known to me that seems to militate against the assumption that the present participle in Anglo-Saxon had not, originally, the power of governing an object, is this: in the *Prose Psalms* there are thirteen examples of the present participle with an object, no one of which is known to have a Latin appositive participle as its original correspondent. All of these participles occur in the Introductions to the *Psalms*. And, in his very able discussion of the *Paris Psalter* (p. 64 ff.), Bruce has shown that these Introductions are paraphrases of Latin originals, principally of the *argumenta* in the commentary *In Psalmorum Librum Exegesis*. In the originals as given by Bruce I find but two correspondences to our participles: in *Psalms* 34 *siofigende* corresponds to a substantive in the ablative with a genitive modifier (Dauid sang ðysne feower and ðrittigoðan sealm, *siofigende* to Drihtne his yrmða = *occasione ærumnarum* suarum David hunc psalmum in tempore Jeremiæ componit, etc.), and in *Ps.* 38 to an ablative absolute (Dauid sang ðysne eahta and ðrittigoðan sealm, *seofigende* to Drihtne, mid hu manegum unrotnessum he wæs ofðrycced under Sawle = *Agentibus* sub Saule *mæroribus*, hunc

psalmum cecinit etc.); while in the remaining eleven examples (37 : *andettende*, 28 : *bebeodende*, 33 : *gehatende*, 39 : *gylpende* (w. gen.), 32 : *herigende*, 47 : *mycliende*, 37 : *seofigende* : 43 : *seofigende*, 32 : *ðanciende*, 45 : *ðanciende*, 31 : *wundriende* (w. gen.)) there is no Latin correspondence. It will be observed, however, that, since one word is repeated four times (*seofigende*) and another twice (*ðanciende*), only seven words are involved; that, although there are no participles in the Latin corresponding to the Anglo-Saxon participles, participles are abundant in the Latin originals; that, as Bruce shows, the *Prose Psalms* are the work of an ecclesiastic; and that the Anglo-Saxon participles are those the Latin correspondents of which must have been often before the eyes and upon the lips of an ecclesiastic (such as *confitens*, *postulans*, *benedicens*, etc.). While, then, in the *Prose Psalms* the number of present participles with an object for which no immediate Latin source has been found, does seem to militate against the statement that originally in Anglo-Saxon the present participle had not the power of governing an object, in reality it does not: the author was an ecclesiastic and naturally molded his English translation on the pattern of what was at once his official language and his literary source.

9. In Late West Saxon, to be sure, especially in Ælfric and in the *Gospels*, there are numerous present participles with direct objects; but this fact does not invalidate the contention that in Anglo-Saxon the present participle had not the governing power originally. It will be observed, further, that in the Late West Saxon translations the participles with objects usually correspond to Latin participles with objects (25 times out of 36 in the *Heptateuch*, 117 times out of 122 in the *Gospels*, and 62 times out of 63 in *Benet*); and that in scores of instances the Latin participle is translated into Anglo-Saxon by a finite verb. The frequency of the participle with an object in Ælfric's *Homilies* and in his *Lives of Saints* is due, of course, to the fact that, as he tells us, these

works are translations from the Latin. The rareness of the present participle with an object in the poems and in the more original prose, especially in the late Wulfstan, would seem to indicate that, despite its great frequency in Ælfric and in the *Gospels*, this construction was never thoroughly naturalized in Anglo-Saxon.

10. Whenever it does govern an object, the present participle, as our examples show, has the same regimen as the verb from which it is derived. We find as object occasionally the genitive (*Gregory*<sup>1</sup> 99. 4: *wilnigende*; *Metr. Ps.* 105. 4: *hycgende*; etc., etc.) and the dative (*Bede*<sup>1</sup> 426. 30: *biosmriendes*; *Ælf. Hom.* II. 128<sup>b</sup>: *ðeowigende*; etc., etc.), but usually the accusative (see Statistics).—In the preceding discussion as to the origin of the present participle with a direct object I have included not only the accusative, but all the cases that from the modern English standpoint appear to be direct objects and, in the Early West Saxon texts and in the poems, all participles with objects, whether direct or not.

## 2. The Preterite Participle.

1. With reference to the preterite participle, the word *object*, as stated in the prefatory note to the Statistics, is used to include not only the object in the ordinary sense, but also any noun modifier of the participle. We find with the preterite participle the object in the genitive (*Ælf. L. S.* XXIII. B. 442: *ælces fylstes bedæled*; *Beow.* 845: *niða ofercumen*; *Gen.* 2344: *geteled rimes*; etc., etc.), the dative (*Ælf. Hom.* I. 544<sup>b</sup><sup>3</sup>: *deorum geferylæhte*; *ib.* II. 314<sup>b</sup>: *beboda mannum gesette*; *Bede*<sup>1</sup> 172. 26: *Ðisse fæmnan Gode gehalgodre weorc*; etc., etc.), and the instrumental (*Bede*<sup>1</sup> 214. 11: *onlysed ðy lichoman*; *ib.* 344. 28: *ðy betstan leoðe geglenged*; etc., etc.). This use of the preterite participle occurs both in the prose and in the poetry, but much more frequently in the latter. The construction seems to be thoroughly natural in Anglo-Saxon.

2. In the whole of Anglo-Saxon literature, however, I have found but one instance of an appositive preterite participle governing an accusative of the direct object, namely, *Luke* 9. 55 (MSS. B. & C.): hine *bewend*, he hig ðreade = *conversus* increpavit illos. The remaining three MSS. and the corresponding *Glosses* here use a finite verb (see p. 225); and Professor Bright in his footnote to the above passage considers *bewend* a slavish translation of the Latin participle. It is scarcely possible to consider as original a construction of which but one example is found in our texts. I believe, therefore, that in Anglo-Saxon the past participle, when used appositively, did not have the power of governing a direct object.

I append tables showing the Latin correspondences of the Anglo-Saxon appositive participles, in their several uses, in the more definite Anglo-Saxon translations from the Latin.

BEDE.<sup>1</sup>

## A.-S. PTC. WITHOUT OBJECT.

## LATIN EQUIVALENT.

## A.-S. PTC.

## WITH OBJECT.

## LATIN EQUIVALENT.

USE.	Tot. Ap. Ptes. in A.-S.	Ap. Ptc.	Abs. Ptc.	Fin. Vb.	Inf.	Ger. in Abl.	Ger. in Gen.	Prep. Ptc.	Sub. in Abl.	Sub. in Nom.	Adj.	Adv.	No Lat.	Tot. in A.-S.	Ap. Ptc.	Gerundive.	Fin. Vb.	No Lat.
Adj. { Pres.....	15	12				1					1		1	3	3			
Adj. { Pret.....	35	26									2		6	9	2			
Mod. { Pres.....	48	19		5		19		1			1	2	2	2	2	1		
Mod. { Pret.....	3	3											1	1	1			
Temp. { Pres.....	22	19			2			1					1	1	1			
Temp. { Pret.....	11	10											1	1	1			
Caus. { Pres.....	3	3											1	1	1			
Caus. { Pret.....	8	6									1		1	1	1			
Fin. { Pres.....	1	1											1	1	1			
Fin. { Pret.....	0	0											0	0	0			
Conc. { Pres.....	0	1											0	0	0			
Conc. { Pret.....	1	0											0	0	0			
Cond. { Pres.....	1	1											0	0	0			
Cond. { Pret.....	4	4											6	6	6			
Co-ord. { Pres.....	1	1											1	1	1			
Co-ord. { Pret.....	1	1											1	1	1			

BOETHIUS.<sup>1</sup>

Adj. { Pres.....	2							2						0				
Adj. { Pret.....	6	3		1									2	0				
Mod. { Pres.....	12	1		1							2		8	0				
Mod. { Pret.....	0													0				
Temp. { Pres.....	1	1												0				
Temp. { Pret.....	0													0				
Caus. { Pres.....	1									1				0				
Caus. { Pret.....	1													0				
Fin. { Pres.....	0													0				
Fin. { Pret.....	0													0				
Conc. { Pres.....	0													0				
Conc. { Pret.....	0													0				
Cond. { Pres.....	0		1											0				
Cond. { Pret.....	3												2	0				
Co-ord. { Pres.....	1	1												0				
Co-ord. { Pret.....	0													0				



GREGORY.<sup>1</sup>

A.-S. PTC. WITHOUT OBJECT.

LATIN EQUIVALENT.

A.-S. PTC.

WITH OBJECT.

LATIN EQUIVALENT.

USE.	Tot. in A.-S.	Ap. Ptc.	Abs. Ptc.	Fin. Vb.	Inf.	Ger. in Abl.	Ger. in Gen.	Prep. Phr.	Sub. in Abl.	Sub. in Nom.	Adj.	Adv.	No Lat.	Tot. in A.-S.	Ap. Ptc.	Ger. in Abl.	Sub. in Acc.	No Lat.
Adj. { Pres.....	1	1												0				
{ Pret.....	7	4												1				
Mod. { Pres.....	48	5		4	2	18	1	7	6	1		1	3	1		1		
{ Pret.....	3							1			1	1		0				
Temp. { Pres.....	6	4		2										1	1			
{ Pret.....	6	4												1				
Caus. { Pres.....	0										1			0				
{ Pret.....	6								2 <sup>1</sup>			1	1	0				
Fin. { Pres.....	1				1									0				
{ Pret.....	0													0				
Conc. { Pres.....	0													0				
{ Pret.....	1	1												0				
Cond. { Pres.....	0													0				
{ Pret.....	0													0				
Co-ord. { Pres.....	0													0				
{ Pret.....	0													0				

OROSIUS.<sup>1</sup>

Adj. { Pres.....	2	1											1	1	1			
{ Pret.....	4	2						1					1	0	0			
Mod. { Pres.....	7									2 <sup>2</sup>	1		4	0	0			
{ Pret.....	0													0	0			
Temp. { Pres.....	2												2	0	0			
{ Pret.....	0													1	0			
Caus. { Pres.....	0													0	1	1		
{ Pret.....	0													0	0			
Fin. { Pres.....	0													0	0			
{ Pret.....	0													0	0			
Conc. { Pres.....	0													0	0			
{ Pret.....	1												1	0	0			
Cond. { Pres.....	0													0	0			
{ Pret.....	0													0	0			
Co-ord. { Pres.....	3	3												0	0			
{ Pret.....	0													0	0			

<sup>1</sup> 1 is in the dative.<sup>2</sup> These are in the genitive.

## METRICAL PSALMS.

A.-S. PTC. WITHOUT OBJECT.

LATIN EQUIVALENT.

A.-S. PTC.

WITH OBJECT.

LATIN EQUIVALENT.

USE.	Tot. in A.-S.	Ap. Ptc.	Abs. Ptc.	Fin Vb.	Inf.	Ger. in Abl.	Gerundive.	Prep. Phr.	Sub. in Abl.	Sub. in Gen.	Adj.	No Lat.	Tot. in A.-S.	Ap. Ptc.	Fin. Vb.	Adj.	Prep. Phr.	No Lat.
Adj. { Pres.....	7	3		2						1	1	1	1	1		1		3
{ Pret.....	6	3										4	9	5				
Mod. { Pres.....	1	1											0			1		1
{ Pret.....	0												1					
Temp. { Pres.....	3	3		2									0					
{ Pret.....	3	1											0					
Caus. { Pres.....	0												0					
{ Pret.....	0												0					
Fin. { Pres.....	0												0					
{ Pret.....	0												0					
Conc. { Pres.....	0												0					
{ Pret.....	0												0					
Cond. { Pres.....	0												0					
{ Pret.....	0												1					1
Co-ord. { Pres.....	2	1										1	3	1	1			1
{ Pret.....	0												0					

BENEDICT.<sup>1</sup>

Adj. { Pres.....	4	2									1	1	1	1				1
{ Pret.....	3						1				2		1	1				
Mod. { Pres.....	9			2				1	1			5	1					
{ Pret.....	2											2	0					
Temp. { Pres.....	3	3											3	3				
{ Pret.....	0												0					
Caus. { Pres.....	1	1											0					
{ Pret.....	1	1											0					
Fin. { Pres.....	0												2	1		1		
{ Pret.....	0												0					
Conc. { Pres.....	0												0					
{ Pret.....	0												0					
Cond. { Pres.....	0												0					
{ Pret.....	2	1										1	0					
Co-ord. { Pres.....	8	6		1								1	31	20	7			4
{ Pret.....	0											1	0					

HEPTATEUCH.<sup>1</sup>

A.-S. PTC. WITHOUT OBJECT.

LATIN EQUIVALENT.

A.-S. PTC.

WITH OBJECT.

LATIN EQUIVALENT.

USE.	Tot. in A.-S.	Ap. Ptc.	Abs. Ptc.	Fin. Vb.	Inf.	Ger. in Abl.	Ger. in Gen.	Prep. Phr.	Sub. in Abl.	Sub. in Nom.	Adj.	Adv.	No Lat.	Tot. in A.-S.	Ap. Ptc.	Fin. Vb.	Ger. in Abl.	No Lat.
Adj. { Pres.....	3	2		1										10				
Adj. { Pret.....	80	10		1				2	1				16	0				
Mod. { Pres.....	6	4		1									1	0				
Mod. { Pret.....	1													0				
Temp. { Pres.....	4	4									1			0				
Temp. { Pret.....	0													0				
Caus. { Pres.....	7													0				
Caus. { Pret.....	1	1											6	0				
Fin. { Pres.....	1							1						1	1			
Fin. { Pret.....	0													0				
Conc. { Pres.....	0													0				
Conc. { Pret.....	0													0				
Cond. { Pres.....	0													0				
Cond. { Pret.....	0													0				
Co-ord. { Pres.....	11	5		3									3	25	15	2		8
Co-ord. { Pret.....	0													0				

THE GOSPELS.<sup>1</sup>

Adj. { Pres.....	24	24												20	19			1
Adj. { Pret.....	17	16												6	6			
Mod. { Pres.....	14	10				2		1			1		1	1	1			
Mod. { Pret.....	0													0				
Temp. { Pres.....	15	15												10	10			
Temp. { Pret.....	6	5		1										1	1			
Caus. { Pres.....	2	2												4	4			
Caus. { Pret.....	5	5												0				
Fin. { Pres.....	0													11	11			
Fin. { Pret.....	0													0				
Conc. { Pres.....	9	9												1	1			
Conc. { Pret.....	0													0				
Cond. { Pres.....	2	2												0				
Cond. { Pret.....	0													0				
Co-ord. { Pres.....	49	45	1	2									1	75	71	3		1
Co-ord. { Pret.....	8	8												0				

## METRES OF BOETHIUS.

A.-S. PTC. WITHOUT OBJECT.

LATIN EQUIVALENT.

A.-S. PTC.

WITH OBJECT.

LATIN EQUIVALENT.

USE.	Tot. in A.-S.	Ap. Ptc.	Abs. Ptc.	Fin. Vb.	Inf.	Ger. in Abl.	Ger. in Gen.	Prep. Phr.	Sub. in Abl.	Sub. in Nom.	Adj.	Adv.	No Lat.	Tot. in A.-S.	Ap. Ptc.	Ger. in Abl.	Adj.	No Lat.
Adj. { Pres.....	1										1			0				
{ Pret.....	1	1												3				
Mod. { Pres.....	0													0	1		1	
{ Pret.....	2			1										0				
Temp. { Pres.....	1												1	0				
{ Pret.....	0													0				
Caus. { Pres.....	0													0				
{ Pret.....	1	1												0				
Fin. { Pres.....	2													0				
{ Pret.....	0												2	0				
Conc. { Pres.....	1		1											0				
{ Pret.....	0													0				
Cond. { Pres.....	0													0				
{ Pret.....	0													0				
Co-ord. { Pres.....	1												1	0				
{ Pret.....	0													0				

BENET.<sup>1</sup>

Adj. { Pres.....	16	14									2			16	16			
{ Pret.....	15	15												8	8			
Mod. { Pres.....	4	1			3									2	2			
{ Pret.....	1	1												1	1			
Temp. { Pres.....	10	10												4	4			
{ Pret.....	8	8												0	0			
Caus. { Pres.....	3	3												4	4			
{ Pret.....	3	3												0	0			
Fin. { Pres.....	0													1	1			
{ Pret.....	0													0	0			
Conc. { Pres.....	0													1	1		1	
{ Pret.....	0													0	0			
Cond. { Pres.....	1	1												0	0			
{ Pret.....	0													2	2			
Co-ord. { Pres.....	2	2												0	0			
{ Pret.....	7	7												33	33			
{ Pret.....	0													0	0			

PROSE PSALMS.<sup>1</sup>

A.-S. PTC. WITH OBJECT.

LATIN EQUIVALENT.

A.-S. PTC. WITH-  
OUT OBJECT.

LATIN EQUIVALENT.

USE.	Tot. in A.-S.	Ap. Ptc.	Abs. Ptc.	Fin. Vb.	Inf.	Ger. in Abl.	Ger. in Gen.	Prep. Phr.	Sub. in Abl.	Sub. in Nom.	Adj.	Adv.	No Lat.	Tot. in A.-S.	Ap. Ptc.	Abs. Ptc.	Sub. in Abl.	No Lat.
Adj. { Pres.....	0													0				
{ Pret.....	4	2												0				
Mod. { Pres.....	3						2	1	1		1			0				
{ Pret.....	0													0				
Temp. { Pres.....	0													0				
{ Pret.....	0													0				
Caus. { Pres.....	1												1	0				
{ Pret.....	0													0				
Fin. { Pres.....	0													0				
{ Pret.....	0													0				
Conc. { Pres.....	0													0				
{ Pret.....	0													0				
Cond. { Pres.....	0													0				
{ Pret.....	0													0				
Co-ord. { Pres.....	3	1						1					1	13		1	1	11
{ Pret.....	0												0	0				

## CHAPTER IV.

THE ANGLO-SAXON RENDERING OF THE  
LATIN APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE.

When not turned by an appositive participle, the Latin appositive participle is translated into Anglo-Saxon as follows:—

## I. NORMALLY BY A CO-ORDINATED FINITE VERB.

Most frequently the Latin appositive participle is rendered in Anglo-Saxon by a co-ordinated finite verb, though the texts vary widely, as is evident from the table in the footnote.<sup>1</sup> That the co-ordinated finite verb is the most frequent rendering of the Latin appositive participle, while the subordinated finite verb is the commonest translation of the Latin absolute participle (see *The Abs. Ptc. in A.-S.*, p. 36), is doubtless due to the fact that not a few of the Latin appositive participles have what we have denominated the “co-ordinate” use; and this rendition is, therefore, more appropriate for the appositive than for the absolute participle.

<sup>1</sup>The proportion of co-ordinated to subordinated finite verbs is as follows:—

<i>Bede</i> <sup>1</sup>	= 2.14:1.
<i>Benedict</i> <sup>1</sup>	= 1:1.97.
<i>Benet</i> <sup>1</sup>	= 1:2.
<i>Genesis</i> <sup>1</sup>	= 5.36:1.
<i>Gregory</i> <sup>1</sup>	= 1:1.56.
<i>Matthew</i> <sup>1</sup>	= 3:1.
<i>Poetical Psalms</i>	= 1:1.88.
<i>Prose Psalms</i>	= 1:1.27.

The ratio of the total co-ordinated to the total subordinated finite verbs in these works is 1.35:1.

But it must be allowed that no principle has been consistently followed throughout by the Anglo-Saxon translators; and that not infrequently this rendition ignores shades of meaning in the original, and at times does positive violence to the sense. Undoubtedly, however, the modification of the sense of the original is often deliberately made by the translator because of his different conception of the relative importance of the ideas denoted by the Latin verb and the Latin participle.

The co-ordinated verb is usually in the indicative, though occasionally in the optative or the imperative. As a rule, the co-ordinated verb occurs in the same sentence as the verb with which it is co-ordinated, but occasionally it stands in an independent sentence. The clauses are generally united by a conjunction, but sometimes there is no connective.

A few examples will suffice to illustrate the range of the construction:—

(1) *Co-ordinated Indicative*: (a) With a verb in the same sentence: *Bede*<sup>2</sup> 21. 9: *relinquens* reuersus est = 40. 1: *wæs forlætende* ⁊ hwearf; *Greg.*<sup>2</sup> 62. 7: Hinc per Isaiam Dominus admonet, *dicens* = 91. 19: forðam myndgode Dryhten ðurh Essaiað ðone witgan ⁊ cwæð; *Mat.* 12. 25: *sciens* dixit = *wiste* ⁊ cwæð; *Gen.*<sup>2</sup> 22. 3: Abraham *consurgens* stravit etc. = A. *aras* . . . and ferde.—Other examples: *Bede*<sup>2</sup> 98. 34 (122. 9), 100. 13 (124. 21); *Greg.*<sup>2</sup> 24. 2 (45. 13), 76. 18, 21 (111. 6, 9); *Gen.* 42. 7, 9; *Mat.* 24. 2, 25. 18; etc., etc.—(b) With a verb in another sentence: *Greg.*<sup>2</sup> 70. 17: Coram testamenti arca Dominum consulit, exemplum . . . rectoribus *præbens* = 103. 6; frægn ðæs Dryhten beforan ðære earce. . . He *astealde* on ðæm bisene; *Gen.* 42. 3; etc.

(2) *Co-ordinated Optative*: *Greg.*<sup>2</sup> 394. 23: ne in semetipsis *torpentes* opere alios excitent voce = 461. 15: ðylæs he oðre awece mid his wordum, ⁊ himself *aslawige* godra weorca; *Bede*<sup>2</sup> 112. 12, 13: *adueniens* . . . peruolauerit, qui . . . *ingrediens* . . . exierit = 136. 1, 2: *Cume* an spearwa,

... fleo 7 cume . . . ut gewite.—Other examples: *Bened.*<sup>2</sup> 56. 2 (29. 6), 56. 8 (29. 12); 58. 16 (31. 11); *Mat.*<sup>2</sup> 22. 24; etc.

(3) *Co-ordinated Imperative*: *Greg.*<sup>2</sup> 150. 24, 25: Et vos domini eadem facite illis, *remittentes* minas, *scientes* quod et illorum et vester Dominus est in cœlis = 203. 1: Ge hlafordas, doð ge eowrum monnum ðæt ilce be hira andefne & *gemetgiað* ðone ðrean; *geðencað* ðæt ægðer ge hira hlaford ge eower is on hefenum.—Other examples: *Mat.*<sup>2</sup> 5. 24, 9. 13, 10. 7; *Ps. Th.*<sup>2</sup> 17. 48; etc.

## II. FREQUENTLY BY A SUBORDINATED FINITE VERB.

Almost as frequently as by a co-ordinated finite verb the Latin appositive participle is translated by an Anglo-Saxon subordinated finite verb, introduced by a conjunction that indicates the relation sustained by the Latin participle to the principal verb. The dependent verb in Anglo-Saxon is more commonly in the indicative, though occasionally in the optative; while at times the form of the verb is ambiguous. The use of the indicative or the optative rests upon the well-known distinction between these two moods, but the principle is not infrequently ignored. I cite examples of each mood. In the main, the examples are arranged according to the use of the appositive participle in Latin:—

1. *The Latin Temporal Clause* is translated by a subordinated finite verb introduced by a temporal conjunction or conjunctive phrase: usually by *ða*, *ða ða*, *ðonne*; less frequently by *æfter ðam ðe*, *æfter ðon ðæt*, *mid ðy*, *oð ðæt*, *siððan*, *sona swa*, *swa*, *swa swiðe swa*, *ða hwile ðe*. Examples: (1) *Indicative*:—*ða*: *Mat.*<sup>2</sup> 27. 24: *Udens* autem pilatus . . . lavit manus = *Ða geseah* p. . . *ða* . . . he ðwoh his handa; *ib.* 8. 8; *Bede*<sup>2</sup> 91. 5 (112. 2), 91. 30 (112. 26); *Greg.*<sup>2</sup> 70. 23 (103. 11); *Gen.*<sup>2</sup> 28. 18, 30. 9; etc.; *ða ða*: *Bede*<sup>2</sup> 87. 4 (106. 24); *Greg.*<sup>2</sup> 136. 5 (181. 17); *Gen.*<sup>2</sup> 3. 8; etc.; *ðonne*: *Greg.*<sup>2</sup> 8<sup>a</sup> (27. 17), 32. 15 (57. 2); *Ps. Th.*<sup>2</sup> 21. 11; *Bened.*<sup>2</sup> 152. 12 (85. 9); etc.; *æfter ðæm ðe*: *Greg.*<sup>2</sup> 216. 23



(287. 9); *æfter ðon ðæt: Bede*<sup>2</sup> 11. 25 (28. 7); *mid ðy: Bede*<sup>2</sup> 84. 5 (102. 30); *oððæt: Greg.*<sup>2</sup> 102. 23 (143. 17); *siððan: Greg.*<sup>2</sup> 78. 16 (113. 11), *Bened.*<sup>2</sup> 132. 18 (70. 9); *sona swa: Greg.*<sup>2</sup> 32. 17 (57. 6); *swa swiðe swa: Greg.*<sup>2</sup> 68. 17 (99. 21); *ða hwile ðe: Greg.*<sup>2</sup> 344. 16 (421. 28.—(2) *Optative: ðonne: Bened.*<sup>2</sup> 32. 11: Injuriam non facere, sed *factam* patienter sufferre = 17. 11: ac *ðonne* him mon yfel *do*, he sceal geðyldelice aræfnian; *Bede*<sup>2</sup> 83. 6 (100. 33); *Greg.*<sup>2</sup> 322. 10 (403. 14); *Mat.*<sup>2</sup> 6. 7; *oð ðæt: Bened.*<sup>2</sup> 202. 14 (131. 6); *siððan: Bened.*<sup>2</sup> 138. 14 (73. 9); *sona swa: Bened.*<sup>2</sup> 138. 14 (73. 9); *swa: Bened.*<sup>2</sup> 158. 11 (91. 13).

*Note.*—*The Latin Co-ordinate Participle*, though normally translated into Anglo-Saxon by a co-ordinated finite verb (see above, p. 321), is sometimes translated by a subordinated finite verb, which clause is temporal. Thus in *Greg.*<sup>2</sup> 156. 3 (*in-crepat, dicens* = 207. 14 *tælde, ða he cwæð*) we have as the translation of *dicens* the dependent *ða he cwæð* instead of the more common independent *and he cwæð* (*Greg.*<sup>2</sup> 98. 16 (137. 16), etc.). I have noted about thirty examples of *dicens* = *ða he cwæð* in *Greg.*<sup>2</sup> and about forty examples of *dicens* = *and he cwæð*. Besides, the Anglo-Saxon dependent temporal clause is substituted for other co-ordinate participles of the Latin.

2. *The Latin Relative Clause* is translated by a subordinated finite verb introduced by a relative pronoun. Examples:—(1) *Indicative: Bened.*<sup>2</sup> 72. 14: *Lectiones ad ipsum deum pertinentes dicantur* = 39. 9: *rædinga syn gesungene, ðe to ðam freolsdæge belimpað; ib.* 2. 6, 8 (1. 7, 9); *Greg.*<sup>2</sup> 18<sup>a</sup> 2 (37. 22); *Bede*<sup>2</sup> 92. 8 (114. 6), 94. 28 (118. 12); *Gen.* 23. 17; *Mat.* 22. 11, 25. 29, 25. 34; *Ps. Th.*<sup>2</sup> 3. 6; etc., etc.—(2) *Optative: Bened.*<sup>2</sup> 44. 8: *Scurrilitates vero vel verba otiosa et risum moventia, æterna clausura in omnibus locis damnamus* = 22. 5: *gegafspræce and idele word and ða word, ðe leahter astyrien . . . we . . . forbeodað; Greg.*<sup>2</sup> 126. 26 (173. 8); *Bede*<sup>2</sup> 57. 17 (80. 25).

3. *The Latin Causal Clause* is rendered by a subordinated finite verb introduced by *forðæm*, *forðæm ðe*, *forðon*, *forðon ðe*, *mid ðy*. Examples:—(1) *Indicative*: *forðæm*: *Greg.*<sup>2</sup> 50. 14: *ad exemplum aliis constitutus* = 77. 13: *Forðæm he bið gesett to bisene oðrum monnum*: *Ps. Th.* 18. 7;—*forðon*: *Greg.*<sup>2</sup> 52. 9 (79. 10); *Bede*<sup>2</sup> 6. 9 (2. 19); *forðæm ðe*: *Greg.*<sup>2</sup> 219. 1 (276. 15 Cot.), *ib.* 232. 12 (305. 2); *Bede*<sup>2</sup> 116. 3 (142. 1); *for ðon ðe*: *Bede*<sup>2</sup> 309. 10 (432. 30); *mid ðy*: *Bede*<sup>2</sup> 12. 13 (28. 18) (or Temporal?).

4. *The Latin Conditional Clause* is translated by a subordinate finite verb introduced by *gif*. Examples:—(1) *Indicative*: *Greg.*<sup>2</sup> 44. 6: *Pupilla namque oculi . . . albuginem tolerans nil videt* = 69. 18: *gif hine ðone ðæt fleah mid ealle ofergæð, ðonne ne mæg he noht gesion*; *ib.* 208. 25 (277. 8); *Bede*<sup>2</sup> 98. 8 (120. 22); *Bened.*<sup>2</sup> 86. 17 (46. 16), 96. 20 (52. 4); *Mat.*<sup>2</sup> 21. 22.—(2) *Optative*: *Greg.*<sup>2</sup> 22. 23: *Cui nolenti in faciem mulier sput* = 45. 2: *Gif hire ðonne se wiðsace, ðonne is cynn ðæt him spiwe ðæt wif on ðæt nebb*.

5. *The Latin Concessive Clause* is turned by a subordinate finite verb introduced by *ðeah*, *ðeah ðe*. Examples:—(1) *Indicative*: *ðeah*: *Greg.*<sup>2</sup> 192. 3: *non levabo caput, saturatus afflictione et miseria* = 253. 8: . . . *ðeah ic eom gefylled mid broce & mid iermðum*.—(2) *Optative*: *ðeah*: *Greg.*<sup>2</sup> 34. 19: *co-actus* = 59. 10: *ðeah hiene mon niede*; *ib.* 42. 18 (67. 23); *Ps. Th.*<sup>2</sup> 3. 5; *ðeah ðe*: *Greg.*<sup>2</sup> 68. 7 (99. 9), *Bede*<sup>2</sup> 57. 29 (82. 4), 272. 28 (368. 16).

6. *The Latin Final Clause* is translated by a subordinated finite verb introduced by *to ðæm ðæt*, *to ðy ðæt*, *ðæt*, *ðe læs*, *ðe læs ðe*, *ðylæs*. Examples:—(1) *Indicative*: I find no example.—(2) *Optative*: *ðæt*: *Mat.*<sup>2</sup> 14. 15: *dimitte turbas, ut euntes in castella emant sibi escas* = *forlæt ðas mænnegeo ðæt hi faron . . . ȝ him mete bigean*; *Greg.*<sup>2</sup> 122. 19 (167. 17); *to ðæm ðæt*: *Greg.*<sup>2</sup> 246. 20 (319. 20); *to ðy ðæt*: *Bened.*<sup>2</sup> 204. 15 (132. 15); *ðe læs*: *Mat.*<sup>2</sup> 13. 29; *ðe læs ðe*: *Gen.*<sup>2</sup> 32. 11; *ðylæs*: *Greg.*<sup>2</sup> 90. 2, 4 (127. 14, 15), 180. 13 (239. 2).

7. *The Latin Modal Clause* is turned by a subordinate finite verb introduced by *swa swa*, *swelce*. Examples:—(1) *Indicative*: *swa swa*: *Greg.*<sup>2</sup> 348. 14: *ut qui voluptatibus delectati discessimus, fletibus amaricati redeamus* = 425. 14: *ðætte us biterige sio hreowsung, swa swa us ær swetedon ða synna*; *Mat.*<sup>2</sup> 9. 36; etc., etc.—(2) *Optative*: *swelce*: *Greg.*<sup>2</sup> 156. 6: *quasi compatiens* = 207. 17: *suelce he efnsuiðe him bære*; *ib.* 80. 22 (117. 1), 94. 30 (135. 1); *Bened.*<sup>2</sup> 180. 6 (113. 25).

8. *The Latin Consecutive Clause* is translated by a subordinated finite verb introduced by *swa ðæt*, *ðæt*, *ðætte*. Examples:—(1) *Indicative*: *swa ðæt*: *Mat.*<sup>2</sup> 13. 2: *congregatæ sunt ad eum turbæ multæ, ita ut in naviculam adscendens sederet* = *mycle mænigeo wæron gesamnade to him swa ðæt he eode on scyp 7 ðær sæt*; *Bede*<sup>2</sup> 278. 11, 12 (378. 20, 21); *ðæt*: *Bede*<sup>2</sup> 116. 4 (142. 2); *Bened.*<sup>2</sup> 188. 15 (124. 5); *ðætte*: *Greg.*<sup>2</sup> 182. 7 (241. 3).—(2) *Optative*: *ðæt*: *Greg.*<sup>2</sup> 34. 21: *caveat ne acceptam pecuniam in sudarium ligans de ejus occultatione judicetur* = 59. 13: *healde hine ðæt he ne enytte ðæt underfongne feoh on ðæm swatline*; *ib.* 38. 14 (63. 15), 398. 20 (463. 13); *ðætte*: *Greg.*<sup>2</sup> 164. 23 (219. 7); *swa ðæt*: *Bened.*<sup>2</sup> 12. 4 (5. 24).

### III. BY A PREPOSITIONAL PHRASE.

Not infrequently the Latin appositive participle is translated into Anglo-Saxon by a prepositional phrase.

(1) The phrase denotes Manner, Means, or Instrumentality, and is introduced by *mid*, *in*, *ðurh*. Examples:—*mid*: *Bened.*<sup>2</sup> 52. 19: *subsequuntur gaudentes et dicentes* = 27. 11: *ðus æfterfylgendlice mid blisse clypiað*; *ib.* 104. 9: *adjutus* = 55. 16: *mid heora fultume*; *Greg.*<sup>2</sup> 274. 1: *iratus* = 353. 20: *mid his ierre*; *in*: *Bede*<sup>2</sup> 239. 18: *Cristus incarnatus* = 310. 26: *Crist in menniscum lichoman*; *ðurh*: *Bened.*<sup>2</sup> 178. 15: *admonitus* = 113. 13: *ðurh myngunge*.

(2) The phrase denotes Time, and is introduced by *æfter*, *be*, *on*, *under*. Examples:—*æfter*: *Bede*<sup>2</sup> 110. 23: *eidem perempto* = 132. 14: *æfter his slege*; *on*: *Bened.*<sup>2</sup> 88. 12: *dormientes* = 47. 11: *on slæpe*; *Greg.*<sup>2</sup> 218. 15 = 289. 10; *under*: *Bede*<sup>2</sup> 114. 26: *albat* = 140. 4: *under crisman* (or Modal?).

(3) The phrase denotes Cause, and is introduced by *for*. Examples:—*Bened.*<sup>2</sup> 96. 20: *excommunicatus* = 52. 5: *for amansunge*; *Greg.*<sup>2</sup> 28. 12 (51. 14); *Greg.*<sup>2</sup> 68. 18: *miseratus* = 99. 22: *for mildheortnesse*; *Greg.*<sup>2</sup> 124. 5: *supernæ formi dinis et dilectionis spiritu afflatus* = 169. 3: *for Godes lufum* 7 *for Godes ege*; *Bede*<sup>2</sup> 32. 30: *fame confecti* = 54. 2: *for hungre*; *Gen.* 19. 29: *Deus recordatus Abrahamæ liberavit Lot* = *alysde L. for Abrahame*; *Gen.* 45. 3: *nimio terrore perterriti* = *for ege*.

(4) The phrase denotes Condition and is introduced by *butan*: *Mat.*<sup>2</sup> 22. 25: *non habens semen* = *butan bearne*.

#### IV. BY A VERB IN THE INFINITIVE MOOD.

Occasionally the Latin appositive participle is translated by an infinitive. Examples:—(1) *The Uninflected Infinitive*: (a) *Without a subject*: *Bened.*<sup>2</sup> 10. 13: *Et si fugientes gehennæ pœnas ad vitam volumus pervenire perpetuam* = 5. 5: And gif he hellewites susla *forbugan* willað and to ecum life cuman; *Bede*<sup>2</sup> 99. 25: *uerbis delectatus promisit* = 122. 33: Ða ongon he *lustfullian* ðæs biscopes wordum and geheht; etc.; (b) *With a subject*: *Bede*<sup>2</sup> 46. 5: *ad iussionem regis residentes* . . . *prædicarent* = 58. 28: Ða het se cyning *hie sittan* . . . and hie . . . *bodedon*; *Mat.*<sup>2</sup> 27. 26.—(2) *The Inflected Infinitive*: *Greg.*<sup>2</sup> 178. 25: *ita nonnunquam quibusdam audita vera nocuerunt* = 237. 11: *sua dereð eac hwilum sumum monnum* ðæt soð *to gehierenne*; *Greg.*<sup>2</sup> 300. 15: *ut cum* . . . *tunc quasi a nobismetipsis foras etiam alios instruentes exeamus* = 385. 9: Ac eft ðonne . . . ðonne bio we of ðære ceastre ut afærene, ðæt is of urum agnum ingeðonce, oðre

men *to læranne*; *Bede*<sup>2</sup> 8. 10: omnes ad quos hæc eadem historia peruenire poterit . . . *legentes* siue *audientes* suppliciter precor, ut = 486. 8: ic eaðmodlice bidde . . . ðætte to eallum ðe ðis ylce stær to becyme . . . *to ræðanne* oððe *to gehyranne* ðæt, etc.; *Bede*<sup>2</sup> 54. 24: si . . . *actura* gratias intrat = 76. 12: ðeah ðe heo . . . Gode ðoncunge *to donne* . . . gange; *Ps. Th.*<sup>2</sup> 9. 12.

#### V. BY AN ATTRIBUTIVE PARTICIPLE.

The Latin appositive participle is at times translated by an Anglo-Saxon attributive participle. Examples:—*Bened.*<sup>2</sup> 24. 13: ut non solum detrimenta gregis sibi *commissi* non patiantur = 14. 8: ðæt he him ðæs *befesten* eowdes nanne æfwirdlan næbbe; *ib.* 92. 14 (49. 18), 146. 11 (78. 10); *Greg.*<sup>2</sup> 22. 12 (43. 14), 126. 7 (171. 11); *Mat.* 17. 14.

#### VI. BY AN ABSOLUTE PARTICIPLE.

Rarely the Latin appositive participle is translated by an Anglo-Saxon absolute participle. Examples:—*Mat.*<sup>2</sup> 13. 1: In illo die *exiens* Jesus de domo, sedebat secus mare = On ðam dæge ðam *hælende ut-gangendum* of huse he sæt wið ða sæ; *Mk.*<sup>2</sup> 5. 2, 16. 12; *Mat.*<sup>2</sup> 17. 14; *Lk.*<sup>2</sup> 1. 63, 17. 7; *Oros.*<sup>2</sup> 33. 29 (34. 1). (See *Abs. Ptc. in A.-S.*, pp. 8, 13.)

#### VII. BY AN ADVERB.

Occasionally the Latin appositive participle is turned by an adverb. Examples:—*Greg.*<sup>2</sup> 360. 18: Hinc iterum *iratus* dicit = 435. 11: he cwæð eft *ierrenga*; *Greg.*<sup>2</sup> 402. 18, 21: *cautus* . . . *sollicitus* = 467. 1, 3: *warlice* . . . *geornlice*; *Ps. Th.*<sup>2</sup> 16. 10: *projicientes* = *forsewenlice*.

#### VIII. BY AN ADJECTIVE.

The Latin appositive participle is at times translated by an Anglo-Saxon adjective. Examples:—*Bede*<sup>2</sup> 108. 32: scio . . .

quæ *uentura* tibi in proximo mala formidas = 128. 25 : ic wat . . . hwylc *toweward* yfel ðu ðe in neahnesse forhtast; *Bede*<sup>2</sup> 82. 5 : adlatus est quidam . . . oculorum *luce priuatus* = 100. 3 : ða lædde mon forð sumne *blindne* mon; *Mat.*<sup>2</sup> 8. 16 : multos *dæmonia habentes* = manege *deofol-seoce*.

## IX. BY A SUBSTANTIVE.

Rarely a Latin appositive participle is represented in Anglo-Saxon by a substantive. Examples :—*Bened.*<sup>2</sup> 116. 7 : Mensis fratrum *edentium* lectio deesse non debet = 62. 3 : Gebroðra *gereorde* æt hyra mysum ne sceal beon butan rædinge; *Greg.*<sup>2</sup> 160. 16, 17 : Egit . . . doctor, ut prius audirent *laudati*, quod recognoscerent, et postmodum, quod *exhortati* sequerentur = 213. 20. 21 : Sua gedyde se . . . lareow ðæt hie æresð gehierdon ða *heringe* ðe him licode forðæm ðæt hie æfter ðæm ðe lusðlicor gehierden ða *lare*.

---

## CHAPTER V.

THE APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE IN THE  
OTHER GERMANIC LANGUAGES.

## I.

In the main, the uses of the appositive participle in the other Germanic Languages tally with those found in Anglo-Saxon. My discussion must be brief not only because of the want of space but also because of the lack of a comprehensive treatment of the appositive participle in these languages. But the treatises of Douse and of Gering answer admirably for Gothic; those of Falk and Torp, of Lund, and of Nygaard for the Scandinavian languages; those of Dietz, O. Erdmann, K. Förster, Mourek, Rannow, Seedorf, Seiler, and Wunderlich, for Old High German; that of Barz for Middle High German; and those of Behaghel and Pratje for Old Saxon. Mourek, Pratje, and Rannow do not classify their examples according to use. Perhaps it is not improper to state that, while this chapter is based on the statistics of others, the interpretation thereof is my own.

1. *Gothic.*

In the Introduction I have already commented on the unwisdom of Gering's excluding the adjectival (relative) participle from the appositive use. Ignoring this, we find the appositive participle freely used adjectivally, adverbially, and co-ordinately (though Gering does not use the last term). As Lücke has shown with reference to the absolute participle, so it is with the appositive participle: Ulfilas was a slavish translator; and his usage represents, I believe, the genius

of the classical (especially Greek) and not of the Germanic languages (see II. below). But at times even Ulfilas turns the Greek appositive participle by a finite verb, Gering (p. 313 ff., 399 ff.) giving not a few examples of the same (over fifty subordinate and twenty-five co-ordinate verbs); whereas the turning of a Greek finite verb by a Gothic appositive participle is very rare (four \* examples, according to Gering, p. 401).

I append a few examples from Gering: *I. Adjectival (Relative)* (Gering's attributive): *Mat.* 8. 9: Jah auk ik manna im *habands* uf waldufija meinamma gadrahtins = Καὶ γὰρ ἐγὼ ἄνθρωπος εἰμι . . . ἔχων ὑπ' ἐμαυτὸν στρατιώτας; *L.* 2. 13: managei harjis himinakundis, *hazjandane* guþ jah *giþandane* = Πλήθος στρατιᾶς οὐρανίου αἰνούντων τὸν θεὸν καὶ λεγόντων; *II. Adverbial*: *Mat.* 27. 63: qaþ nauh *libands* = εἶπεν ἔτι ζῶν (temporal); *Mk.* 6. 20: Herodis ohta sis Iohannen, *kunnands* ina wair garaihtana jah weihana = Ἡρώδης ἐφοβεῖτο τὸν Ἰωάννην, εἰδὼς αὐτὸν ἄνδρα δίκαιον καὶ ἅγιον (causal); *J.* 6. 6: þatuh þan qaþ *fraisands* ina = Τοῦτο δὲ ἔλεγεν πειράζων αὐτόν (final); *Mat.* 6. 17: iþ þu *fastands* salbo haubiþ þein = Σὺ δὲ νηστεύων ἀλειψαί σου τὴν κεφαλὴν (conditional according to Gering, but may be temporal); *Lk.* 2. 48: sa atta þeins jah ik *winnandona* sokidedum þuk = ὁ Πατὴρ σου καὶ γὰρ ὀδυνώμενοι ἐζητοῦμέν σε (modal: manner); *Mk.* 6. 5: siukaim handuns *galagjands* gahailida = ἀρρώστοις ἐπιθεὶς τὰς χεῖρας ἐθεράπευσεν (modal: means, Gering's instrumental); *J.* 7. 15: hwaiwa sa bokos kann *unuslasiþs*? = Πὼς οὗτος γράμματα οἶδεν μὴ μεμαθηκώς (concessive, Gering's limitative); *III. Co-ordinate* (not treated by Gering as such): *Mat.* 6. 31: Ni maurnaiþ nu *giþandans* = Μὴ οὖν μεριμνήσετε λέγοντες; *Mk.* 9. 12: Iþ is *andhafjands* qaþ du im = ὁ δὲ ἀποκριθεὶς εἶπεν αὐτοῖς.

\* But since, in making this statement, Gering limits himself to the adverbial uses of the appositive participle, there must be more than four examples in all. I have myself found about this number in *Mark*.



2. *The Scandinavian Languages.*

According to the statements of Lund, of Falk and Torp, and of Nygaard, the appositive participle has had the same history in the Scandinavian languages as in Anglo-Saxon.

As Lund's *Oldnordisk Ordføjningslære*\* is out of print, it is best, perhaps, to quote in full what he has to say of the appositive use of the participle in Old Norse, together with his examples (§ 149): "Tillægsformerne, især den handlende, føjes (som hosstillet) til et navneord i sætningen for at betegne en med hovedhandlingen samtidig (eller førtidig) handling eller tilstand, der står således i forbindelse med hovedhandlingen, at den ikke alene kan bestemme dens tidsforhold, men også dens måde og andre omstændigheder, som grund, anledning, betingelse, modsætning osv., hvilke forhold almindelig ellers (som på Dansk) udtrykkes ved bisætninger (med bindeord eller henhørende udtryk) eller ved en forholdsordsforbindelse. Skönt denne brug ikke er meget almindelig (som i Græsk og Latin), tjener den dog ikke sjælden til at give talen korthed og bøjelighed, da tillægsformerne på denne måde kunne føjes ikke alene til sætningens grundord, men også til genstanden, hensynet og andre led deri." Then follow his examples: Hlæjandi Völundr hófsk at lopti, grátandi Böðvildr gekk ór eyju. *Völundarkv.* 27.—(Hann) hafði tekit lax ór forsinum ok át blundandi. *Sn. Edd.* 72.—Ór hans siðu sofanda tók guð eitt rif ok fylldi rúm rifsins með holði. *Gisl.* 44, 66.—Sá sem norrœnaði, kennandi sinn fátækdóm ok vanføri tók þetta verk upp á sik af boðskap ok forsögn fyrri sagðs virðuligs herra. *Stjórn* 2.—Sá er kaupir vís vitandi (*sciens, med sit vidende, således at han ved*) *Grág.* I., 15.—Hón drottningin þetta sjandi (*hoc videns, ved at se dette*) fylldist spáleiksanda ok mælti svá. *Biskupa S.* 217.—At fengnum andsvörum spurðra luta ok offraðu miklu fè. *Alex.* 51.—Drukku jarlar

\* For the loan of this book I am indebted to Professor James Morgan Hart, who also kindly called my attention to the work of Falk and Torp.

öl þegiandi (*tiende æ: uden at råbe dertil*), en œpanda ölker stóð. *Hervar.* 41.—In the next paragraph (§ 150) Lund discusses the attributive use of the participle; and some of the examples there given would come under our “adjectival” use of the appositive participle.

In their recent work, *Dansk-Norskens Syntax i Historisk Fremstilling*, Falk and Torp briefly treat the appositive use of the participle not only in Old Norse but also in the modern Scandinavian languages. Their statement is an admirable supplement to that of Lund, and is worthy of quotation (§ 67. 3): “Apposition af participier forholder sig væsentlig som adjektivernes. Ved præsens particip forekommer appositiv brug i oldnorsk kun i lærd stil: *hon misgørði etandi af tressins ávexti; talaði þá fyrir sínum mǫnnum svá mælandi*. Endnu er udtryk som: jeg gik igang med arbeidet stolende paa hans løfte; trodsende alle hindringer trængte han frem, fremmede for den egte folkelige udtryksmaade. Den ældre kancellistil yndede saadanne vendinger: paa eet andhet stedt talindis om bandt siger han saa (P. Elies.); T. gick vd emod dennem berendis hostiam (Abs. Ped.); andre breffue lydendis at (St. D. Pr.); jeg befaler dig Gud ønskendis dig ald lyksalighed (Pont.); befalendiss dig hermed gud og himmelen (Chr. VI.). Ved fortidsparticip findes appositiv brug i oldnorsk klassik prosa kun i et parenkle udtryk: *þá lagu þar fyrir Danir komnir ór leiðangri*. I lærde skrifter forekommer ogsaa foranstillet apposition: *utgenginn af skóla heldr hann sik nú upp á leikmanna hátt; ór sínu valdi kastadr dó hann i myrkvastofu*. Endnu er forbindelser som: forladt af alle døde han i ensomhed; opbragt herover pønsede han paa hævn, ganske uhjemlige og fremmede for godt landsmaal. Uden anstød er derimod den efterstillede apposition i udtryk som: Gud sendte sín søn, født af en kvinde; til en by, kaldet Ephrem. I den ældre kunstige stil paatræffes vendinger som: rigdom ther ijlde brughet giffuer orsage till alwerdsins homodt (P. Elies.); aalijs, ther mange menniskir smwrde met worde karsceke (*ib.*). Sml. § 139, 1.” The section cited runs:

“Appositivt particip til betegnelse af den en hovedsætning underordnede handling, erstattende en relativ, tids-eller aarsagssætning, er i det hele og store en fremmed brug i nordisk : se § 67, 3. I vort skriftsprog er denne udtryksmaade ikke sjelden : han gik bort, pønsende paa hævn ; ankommen til byen, gik han straks ned til havnen. I dagligtalen anvendes den aldrig. Anderledes hvor participiet betegner subjektets tilstand under handlingen. Her fungerer det som adjektiv, idet dette kan anvendes paa samme maade : *Guðrún grátandi gekk ór túni* ; han gik slagen derfra (sml. han gik glad bort) ; se § 68, 2 b.”

Nygaard considers that the use of the participle in Norse prose is largely due to Latin influence. As I have not had access to his article on *Den Lærde Stil i den Norrøne Prosa*, I quote the summary of the Berlin *Jahresbericht* for 1896 : “Der gelehrte stil zeigt sich in der nordischen prosa : 1. in der erweiterung des gebrauchs des part. præsens, das in volkstümlichen stile nicht allzu häufig angewendet wird. Auf dem gebrauch dieses part. hat im gelehrten stil das lat. part. præsens und das gerundium eingewirkt. 2. Auch der gebrauch des part. præter. ist in dem gelehrten stil wesentlich erweitert. Namentlich wird das part. præter. häufig mit präpositionen (*at*, *eptir*) verbunden ; wir haben hier eine konstruktion, die dem lat. abl. absol. entspricht.”

### 3. *High German.*

#### (1) Old High German.

I have been surprised to find how closely the uses of the appositive participle in Old High German correspond to those in Anglo-Saxon. True, Tatian has no Anglo-Saxon counterpart, for he is as slavish in following his original as is Ulfilas ; and has hundreds of examples of the un-Germanic co-ordinate participle. But the more original Otfrid and Isidor are quite different. In Otfrid and Notker the modal participle was

so common that it developed an adverbial ending in *-o* (O. Erdmann, *Syntax der Sprache Otfrids*, p. 219), as in Otfrid, IV., 12. 53: *er fuor ilonto*; v., 9. 14: *ir get sus drurento*. The modal use is found, too, in Isidor. In Isidor and in Otfrid, again, the adjectival use of the preterite participle is common, while that of the present is comparatively rare, being limited as in Anglo-Saxon to participles with slight verbal power. The other uses are rare in both writers. Isidor, for instance, has only four examples of the co-ordinate participle, all from *quedan*; two are in direct translation of the Latin *dicens*, and we may add also the other two, though *dicens* does not occur in these two passages. But eighteen times Isidor translated a Latin co-ordinate participle by a finite verb (nine co-ordinated and nine subordinated). Clearly, then, if Isidor and Otfrid are true types, the co-ordinate participle was as unnatural in Old High German as in Anglo-Saxon. In the *Benediktinerregel*, finally, the present participle often answers to a Latin gerund in the ablative (Seiler, p. 470).

Examples: (1) *Adjectival (Relative)*.—Tatian, 88. 2: *Uuas sum man dar drizog inti ahto iar habenti in sinero unmahti* = *Erat autem quidam homo ibi triginta octo annos habens in infirmitate sua*; Otfrid, III., 20. 1: *gisah einan man, blintan giboranan*; Tatian, 107. 1: *Inti uuas sum arm betalari ginemnit Lazarus* = *Et erat quidam mendicus nomine Lazarus*; (2) *Adverbial*.—Otfrid, I., 17. 73: *sie wurtun slafente fon engilon gimanote* (temporal); Tatian, 192. 2: *Inti anderu managu bismaronti quadun in inan* = *Et alia multa blasphemantes dicebant in eum* (modal: manner); Tatian, 12. 3: *inti inan ni findanti fuorun uuidar zi Hierusalem inan suochemti* (causal and final); Otfrid, v., 12. 26: *er ingiang ungimerrit, duron so bisperrit* (concessive); Otfrid, I., 8. 6: *thiu racha, sus gidan, nam thes huares thana wan* (conditional); (3) *Co-ordinate*.—Otfrid, I., 13. 18: *barg thiu wort, in herzen ahtonti*; Tatian, 6. 6: *Maria uuarlihho gihielt allu thisiu uuort ahtonti in ira herzen* = *M. autem conservabat omnia verba haec conferens in corde suo*; Tatian, 54. 6: *antvvurtenti quad zi in* = *re-*

*spondens* dixit ad illos; Tatian, 81. 2: sprah in *quedenti* = locutus est eis *dicens*.

## (2) Middle High German.

The story is the same in Middle High German, if we may take Barz's \* statistics of the *Nibelungenlied* and *Iwein* as true for Middle High German in general. Here the adverbial participle denoting manner is very common, and we meet with *sorgende*, *swigende*, *unwizzende*, etc., as in Anglo-Saxon. But the adverbial participle denoting means is practically unknown, and the other uses of the adverbial appositive participle are rare. Those cited as temporal and as final occur in close connection with verbs of motion, and waver between predicative and adverbial uses. The adjectival (relative) use is almost exclusively confined to the preterite participle. The co-ordinate use is not known.

Examples from Barz:—(1) *Adjectival (Relative)*: *Nib.* 2. 3: ein vil edel magedin, daz . . . sin, Kriemhilt *geheizen*; *Nib.* 833. 2: die truogen liehte pfelle . . ., *geworht* in Arabin; (2) *Adverbial*: *Nib.* 1065. 1: vil lute *scriende* daz liut gie mit im dan (temporal); *Nib.* 2333. 3: ez giengen iuwer helde zuo disem gademe *gewafent* wol ze vlize (temporal); *Nib.* 502. 3: *sorgende* † wahte er (modal: manner); *Iw.* 3227: er stal sich *swigende* † dan (modal); *Iw.* 6113: daz ist *unwizzende* † geschehen (modal); *Iw.* 531: daz ich *suochende* rite einen man (final); *ib. Iw.* 4163, 5775.

## (3) New High German.

The fullest recent treatment accessible to me of the appositive participle in New High German is that by von Jagemann in his *Elements of German Syntax*; of which this section of

\* Paul does not treat the construction.

† Barz (p. 22) puts this under *Adverbialer Gebrauch des Participiums*, not *Appositiver Gebrauch*.

my paper is scarcely more than a summary. In § 124, 4a, he gives the three following examples of the appositive participle in New High German: "She sat weeping by the bedside of her mother = Sie sass weinend am Bette ihrer Mutter; He entered the room in silence = Schweigend trat er in das Zimmer; Pierced by an arrow he sank to the ground = Von einem Pfeile getroffen sank er zu Boden." To me, however, the participle in the first example appears to be used predicatively. The remaining two are appositive, the former denoting manner and the latter cause. In § 125, notwithstanding, we are told: "Present participles should not be used in German to express adverbial relations of time, cause, or *manner*."\* I do not know how to reconcile the italicized part of this statement with example two above, unless for the moment Professor von Jagemann had in mind the statement made in § 124, 3c: "A limited number of present participles are no longer felt as such, but as common adjectives, and they may therefore be used predicatively and *adverbially*\*: He is absent = Er ist abwesend; She sang charmingly = Sie sang reizend;" and thought that he had put Schweigend trat er in das Zimmer under § 124, 3c instead of § 124, 4a. Be this as it may, his statement that the present participle may be used adverbially is in strict keeping with the tradition not only of High German, but also of the Germanic languages in general, so far as it is used to denote manner. The non-use of the present participle to denote time and cause is what our preceding investigation has led us to expect.

Again, we learn that the "adjectival" use of the present appositive participle is not allowed (§ 124, 4b): "This [*i. e.*, the appositive] use of a participle, however, is not permitted in the numerous cases in which an important limitation of a noun is to be expressed. The participle should then be used attributively, before the noun, preceded by its own qualifiers

\* The italics are mine.

(see § 231, 2); or else a relative clause should be substituted: The book lying on the table was a Greek Grammar = Das auf dem Tische liegende Buch war eine griechische Grammatik, *or* Das Buch, das auf dem Tische lag etc.; The candidate receiving the largest number of votes is elected = Der die meisten Stimmen erhaltende Candidat (*or* derjenige Candidat, welcher die meisten Stimmen erhält,) ist erwählt; I prefer an edition of Molière's works printed in France = Ich ziehe eine in Frankreich gedruckte Ausgabe von Molière's Werken (*or* eine Ausgabe von . . . die in Frankreich gedruckt ist,) vor."

Finally, we are told that the "co-ordinate" use of the present participle is not common (§ 124, 4c): "A present participle should not, ordinarily, be used to express an idea as important as, or more important than, that expressed by the finite verb, but a co-ordinate verb should be used instead of the participle: He sat at his desk all day, writing letters = Er sass den ganzen Tag an seinem Pulte und schrieb Briefe; He stood on the mountain, looking down into the valley = Er stand auf dem Berge und sah ins Thal hinunter." This usage is in strict accord with that of Early West Saxon.

No specific statement is made as to the governing power of the present participle when used appositively. But, from § 124. 4<sup>b & c</sup> above quoted, we learn that the present appositive participle seldom governs an object in New High German, the participle with an object usually being attributive.

As to the past participle, von Jagemann has this to say (§ 126): "Although past participles are more frequently used in German to express adverbial relations than present participles, yet they cannot be used with the same freedom as in English, and it will often seem best to make substitutions for them similar to those just indicated for present participles."

#### 4. *Old Saxon.*

In Old Saxon (cf. Behaghel, and Pratje, §§ 156, 159) we again meet with the adverbial participle denoting manner

(*sorgondi*, *gornondi*, *greetandi*, etc.), but not means. The only instances of the temporal participle are with *slapandi* and *libbiandi*. The other adverbial uses are unrepresented (cf. Behaghel, § 300). The adjectival (relative) use is commoner with the preterite than with the present. The co-ordinate participle is unknown; for the participles cited by Behaghel in § 300, B., are either predicative or modal.

Examples (all from the *Heliand* as given by Pratje):—(1) *Adjectival (relative)*: 3391: *huo ik hier brinnandi thrauerc tholon*; 2776: *that man iro Johannes . . . hobid gavi alosit fan is lichamen*; (2) *Adverbial*: Temporal: 1013: *that gi so libbeandi thena landes uuard selvon gisahon*; 701: *sagda im an suefna slapandion on naht*;—modal: 4588: *thuo bigan thero erlo gihuilic te oðremo . . . sorgondi gisehan*; 4071: *griot gornondi*; 2996: *gruotta ina greetandi*; etc. Pratje (§ 155. 2) considers *uullandi* an adverb in 1965: *thoh hie . . . manno huilicon uullandi forgeve uuatares drincan*.

## II.

Despite the professed incompleteness of the preceding presentation of the uses of the appositive participle in the Germanic languages exclusive of English, I believe it warrants us in drawing certain general conclusions concerning the origin of the appositive participle in the Germanic languages, as follows:—

1. The adverbial participle denoting manner and the adjectival (relative) past participle are most probably native to the Germanic languages. Perhaps, too, the adjectival and the temporal uses with words like *be*, *live*, and *sleep* are native.

2. All other uses of the appositive participle, whether present or past, are probably of Greek or Latin origin.

3. That the appositive use of the present participle having an object is derived from the Greek and the Latin is highly probable. True, the appositive participle in *Ulfilas* and in *Tatian* governs an object with extraordinary frequency; but



I believe that a comparison of the examples with the originals would show that in almost every case the construction is in direct imitation of the Greek and the Latin. Neither Gering nor Mourek cites all the examples of the participle with an object; Mourek does not give the Latin original along with the Old High German; and I have not made an exhaustive comparison in either case. But the slight study I have given forces me to the above conclusion. I find, for instance, that out of 151 present participles with a direct object in the Gothic *Mark* 139 correspond to Greek participles with objects; and that in most of the twelve exceptional cases the participle translates a Greek participle elsewhere in *Mark*. Mourek cites 140 examples of *quedenti* in Tatian; and, on turning to the Latin, I find that in 137 of these instances the Old High German participle is a direct translation of *dicens*. More than this, not a few of the Greek participles with an object that are cited by Gering (pp. 313 ff., 399 ff.) are turned by a finite verb, whereas the whole number of Greek verbs turned by Gothic participles is very small. In the more original Old High German texts, a present participle with an object is almost unknown. Of the appositive participles (present) cited from Otfrid by Erdmann only three have an object (*singenti*, I. 12. 22; *hel-senti*, I. 11. 46; *érénti*, I. 5. 50). With the present appositive participles cited from Isidor by Rannow, an object occurs only four times, each time the participle of the verb *quedan*; in two of these instances in direct translation of the Latin *dicens*, and in the other two without any corresponding participle in the Latin. More than this, eighteen times Isidor translated a Latin participle having an object by a finite verb (co-ordinated nine and subordinated nine), nine of these being forms of *dicens*.—In Middle High German, too, an object is seldom found. Barz cites only three examples from *Iwein* and the *Nibelungenlied* (*Nib.* 2292: gie Wolfhart . . . *houwende* die Guntheres man; *Iw.* 531: daz ich *suochende* rite einen man; *Iw.* 4163: die reit ich *suochende*), and these are in connection

with a verb of motion, and waver between the predicative and the appositive use.—The comparative infrequency of the present participle with an object in New High German is known to all.—As for Old Saxon, not one of the genuine appositive participles cited by Pratje has an object.

### III.

The other Germanic languages employed about the same substitutes for the Greek and Latin appositive participle as did Anglo-Saxon; hence this topic may be treated with great brevity.

#### 1. *The Co-ordinated Finite Verb.*

Of the co-ordinated finite verb, Gering (p. 399 f.) cites about twenty-five examples from Ulphilas, such as *Mk.* 5. 41 : *κρατήσας τῆς χειρὸς τοῦ παιδίου λέγει* = *fairgraiþ bi handau þata barn qapuh*; *J.* 18. 22 : *ἔδοκεν ῥάπισμα . . . εἰπὼν* = *gaf slah . . . qapuh*; etc.—This translation is common in Old High German, also, ten examples occurring in Isidor (*Rannow*, p. 99 f.): 39. 26 : *etiam locus ipse coruscans miraculis . . . ad se omnem contrahat mundum* = *ioh auh dhiu selba stat chischeinit . . . ioh zi imu chidhinsit allan mittingart*; 4. 33 : *respondens . . . ait* = *antuurta . . . quad*; etc.

#### 2. *The Subordinated Finite Verb.*

For the dependent clause as a translation of the Greek and Latin appositive participle in the other Germanic languages, see Gering, p. 395 ff.; *Rannow*, p. 100.

As to Gothic, Gering gives but two or three examples of this locution in his treatment of the appositive participle (*J.* 13. 30 : *λαβὼν . . . ἐξῆλθεν* = *biþe andnam þana hlaib jains, suns galaiþ ut*; *Philip.* 1. 27); but, as already stated, Gering limits the term appositive to the "adverbial" uses of the participle, and excludes therefrom the "adjectival," unwisely considering all the latter "attributive." Many of his attributive parti-

ciples are, according to our definition, appositive; and in not a few of these examples, as Gering states (p. 313), the Greek participle is translated by a Gothic subordinated finite verb introduced by a relative pronoun, as in: *Mat.* 6. 4, 6. 18: ὁ πατήρ σου ὁ βλέπων ἐν τῷ κρυπτῷ = *atta þeins saei saihwiþ* in *fulhnsja*; *Eph.* 1. 3: θεὸς . . . ὁ εὐλογήσας ἡμᾶς = *gub . . . izei gapiuþida* uns; etc., etc. (about fifty examples in all). Moreover, as Gering tells us (p. 317 ff.), the Greek substantivized participle is often turned by a Gothic dependent clause. In reality, then, the translation of a Greek appositive participle (especially in its adjectival use) by a subordinated finite verb is very common in Gothic.

In Old High German, also, the dependent finite verb often translates a Latin appositive participle. Rannow (p. 100) cites ten examples from Isidor; of which I quote two only: 19. 14: *secundum Moysi sententiam dicentis* = after Moyses quhidim, *dhar ir quhad*; 21. 16: *sed semetipsum exinanivit formam servi accipiens* = oh ir sih selbun aridalida, *dhuo ir scalches chilihnissa infenc*.

### 3. The Prepositional Phrase.

Rannow (p. 102) cites one instance of this construction in Isidor: 19. 26: *incarnatus et homo factus est* = in *fleisches liihheman* uuardh uuordan; which should be compared with Bede<sup>2</sup> 239. 18: *Cristus incarnatus* = 310. 26: in *menniscum lichoman*.

### 4. The Infinitive.

Gering (p. 397) cites one example from the Gothic: *Mk.* 10. 46: ἐκάθητο παρὰ τὴν ὁδὸν προσαιτῶν = *sat faur wig du aihtron*, but the Greek participle here is better considered predicative.

### 5. The Adverb.

Four examples of this locution occur in Gothic (Gering, p. 306): 2 *Cor.* 13. 2, 10: ἀπὸν γράφω = *alþaþro melja*; *Phil.* 1. 25, 27.

6. *The Adjective.*

This substitution is very common in Gothic (Gering, p. 301 f.): *Mk.* 6. 9: ὑποδεδεμένος = *gaskohs*; etc., etc.—Six examples occur in Isidor (Rannow, p. 102): 33. 5: *mente caecati* = *muotes blinde*; etc.

7. *The Substantive.*

This construction occurs in Gothic (Gering, p. 303) and in Old High German (Rannow, p. 102). Examples:—(a) Gothic: *Mat.* 8. 16: προσήνεγκαν αὐτῷ δαιμονιζομένους πολλούς = *atberun du imma daimonarjans managans*; etc.;—(b) Old High German: Isidor, 21. 30: *dominus numeravit scribens populos* = *druhtin saghida dhazs chiscrip dhero folcho* (see Rannow's footnote on this sentence).

## CHAPTER VI.

THE ANGLO-SAXON APPOSITIVE PARTICIPLE  
AS A NORM OF STYLE.

In my dissertation on *The Absolute Participle in Anglo-Saxon* a chapter is given to "The Absolute Participle as a Norm of Style," which is based on Professor Gildersleeve's essay "On the Stylistic Effect of the Greek Participle." In that chapter is discussed the stylistic effect not only of the absolute participle, but also, incidentally, of the appositive participle. I need not, therefore, detail here the theory there laid down, the more so that nothing has occurred to make me change the view then expressed. Since, however, this study may come into the hands of some to whom the earlier paper is not accessible, I shall briefly state the theory there given, and add such comments and illustrations as may seem called for by the present detailed investigation of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon.

The theory as to the stylistic effect of the absolute participle in Anglo-Saxon was summarized in these words (p. 52): "The stylistic effect of the absolute participle in Anglo-Saxon was much the same as in the classical languages: it gave movement to the sentence; it made possible flexibility and compactness. But, owing to the artificial position of the absolute construction in Anglo-Saxon, its stylistic value was reduced to a minimum, was indeed scarcely felt at all. The absolute participle rejected as an instrument of style, the Anglo-Saxon had no adequate substitute therefor. The two commonest substitutes, the dependent sentence and the co-ordinate clause, as used in Anglo-Saxon, became unwieldy and monotonous. Brevity and compactness were impossible; the sentence was slow in movement and somewhat cumber-

some. The language stood in sore need of a more flexible instrument for the notation of subordinate conceptions, of such an instrument as the absolute dative seemed capable of becoming but never became."

In the light of the foregoing history of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon, does this theory as to the stylistic effect of the absolute participle apply likewise to the appositive participle? Was the appositive participle as artificial a construction as the absolute participle? or was it more or less naturalized, if not native, in Anglo-Saxon?

Undoubtedly the stylistic effect of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon is to give the sentence movement, flexibility, and compactness; and it does this to a somewhat greater degree, I think, than could an equal number of absolute participles. To test this statement one need only compare a half dozen pages of Alfred, in which, as we have seen, the appositive participle (especially in certain uses) is rare, with the same number of Ælfrie's, which are strewn therewith. The slowness and the clumsiness of the former are not more patent than the rapidity, the flexibility, and the grace of the latter. Space does not allow quotations, nor are they necessary.

But the above statement is with reference to the appositive participle as a whole, whereas in Anglo-Saxon, as we have learned, the appositive participle has three sharply differentiated uses. Let us look at each for a moment by itself.

In its adjectival use, the appositive participle contributes not only to rapidity and flexibility but also to picturesqueness. The two former effects were attained in both prose and poetry; the last, as a rule, in poetry only; and all three to a greater or less degree in all stages of the Anglo-Saxon period, at least so far as the preterite participle was concerned. For the adjectival use of the present participle the Anglo-Saxon went to the Latin, though not until the Late West Saxon period. What a boon this borrowing was is clearly revealed by a comparison of Alfred with Ælfrie or with the *Gospels*; or, to give a more modern illustration, by comparing modern English with New High German, as,

for instance, in the examples quoted from von Jagemann in chapter v.

Of the adverbial uses, the Anglo-Saxon at the outset wielded with skill only that denoting manner, as in *swigende cweð*, etc. How poor he was as compared with us may be readily realized if we suppose the modern Englishman deprived, as is the modern German, of the ability to express means, time, cause, concession, etc., by the appositive participle. That was the situation of the Early West Saxon; but, thanks to Ælfric and the translators of the *Gospels*, Anglo-Saxon borrowed from the Latin what was so sadly needed; and Ælfric's pages run as smoothly as do those of a modern Englishman. The fact, however, that these newly introduced uses of the adverbial appositive participle are so rare in the latter part of the *Chronicle* and in Wulfstan, leaves it doubtful whether the wisdom of Ælfric's adoption received as immediate recognition as it deserved; though the non-use in the former may be due to the fact that it professes to be merely a bald record of facts. It seems probable, nevertheless, that these uses did not become normal for English until after the close of the Anglo-Saxon period, largely perhaps through the Anglo-Saxon and Middle English translations of the Bible, supplemented by French influence.

The Anglo-Saxon stood in greater need, I think, of the co-ordinate participle than of the adverbial (exclusive of that denoting manner); and Alfred's persistent refusal to use it accounts in a large measure for the monotony of his style. Again Ælfric and the translators of the *Gospels*, discerning the need, borrowed from the Latin, this time the co-ordinate participle, and thereby gave to English a construction that, judged from the standpoint of style, was of immense value. Here, also, the difference between Alfred and Ælfric is the difference between modern English and modern German, happily illustrated in the examples cited from von Jagemann above (chapter v). A third time Ælfric's lead was coldly followed by his immediate successors (Wulfstan and the author(s) of the later *Chronicle*),

and the construction hardly became fixed until the Middle English period, again through the help of the biblical translations. The foregoing applies chiefly to the present participle; the preterite participle, being inherently unsuited to the co-ordinate use, is as rare in Ælfric as in modern English.

The chief shortcoming, however, of the Anglo-Saxon appositive participle was, I take it, that in no one of the three uses did the present participle originally have the power of governing an object in construction. The introduction of this use, from the Latin, by Ælfric and the Late West Saxon translators constitutes, to my mind, their chief contribution to English style; for, with the possible exception of the infinitive and the modern gerund, no single construction has contributed so much to the compactness and the flexibility of the modern English sentence. Here, too, the innovation was tardily accepted, being seldom resorted to by Wulfstan or by the author of the *Peterborough Chronicle*. The general adoption of the construction in English was largely due to the influence of the biblical translations. Finally, the difference between Alfred and Ælfric is once more paralleled in that between modern English and modern German.

The Anglo-Saxon substitutes for the appositive participle call for only brief comment. The most frequent substitute, the co-ordinated finite verb, does well enough for the co-ordinate participle, but for no other, since it ignores shades of meaning. The next most common, the subordinated finite verb, is ill fitted to take the place of the co-ordinate participle, since it unduly subordinates the idea of the participle to that of the principal verb; but it is an excellent substitute for the adjectival and the adverbial participle, and is often so used not only in Anglo-Saxon but also in modern English and in the other Germanic languages. Undoubtedly, however, the appositive participle is a more flexible instrument for the denotation of subordinate ideas than is the dependent finite verb; witness the difference in this regard between modern English and modern German.



## CHAPTER VII.

## RESULTS.

The following are in brief the results that I believe to be established by this investigation :—

1. In Anglo-Saxon the appositive participle occurs oftenest in the nominative case, occasionally in the accusative and the dative, rarely in the genitive.

2. In Anglo-Saxon, especially in Late West Saxon and in the poems, the appositive participle is often not inflected, much oftener indeed than has hitherto been supposed. For details see p. 150 ff.

3. When inflected, the appositive participle almost invariably follows the strong declension.

4. As a rule, the appositive participle follows its principal, though occasionally (about 100 times in all) it precedes.

5. The uses of the appositive participle are three-fold :—

(1) Adjectival, in which the participle is equivalent to a dependent adjectival (relative) clause.

(2) Adverbial, in which the participle is equivalent to a dependent adverbial (conjunctive) clause ; subdivided into (*a*) modal (manner and means), (*b*) temporal, (*c*) causal, (*d*) final, (*e*) concessive, and (*f*) conditional clauses. Some participles denoting manner, however, are equivalent, not to dependent adverbial clauses, but to simple adverbs.

(3) Co-ordinate, in which the participle is substantially equivalent to an independent clause ; subdivided into (*a*) the "circumstantial" participle in the narrower sense, which merely denotes an accompanying circumstance ; and (*b*) the

“iterating” participle, which simply repeats the idea of the chief verb.

6. As to the origin of the appositive participle in Anglo-Saxon, in some uses it is (A) native and in others (B) foreign (Latin).

*A. Native.*

(1) In the following uses the appositive participle appears to be a native English idiom :—

(a) The adjectival use of the preterite participle and, perhaps, of a few slightly verbal present participles like *living*, *lying* (*licgende*), etc.

(b) The modal use of the present and of the preterite participle when each denotes manner.

(c) Perhaps the temporal use in a few present participles of slight verbal force like *being*, *living*, and *sleeping*.

(2) The grounds for the statements in (1) are as follows :

(a) In the uses there specified the appositive participle is found in Early West Saxon. (b) It occurs, also, in Late West Saxon, in the more original prose (the *Chronicle*, the *Laws*, and *Wulfstan*), and in the poems not known to be based on Latin originals as well as in those believed to be translations. (c) In a number of instances in the translations, the Old English participle does not correspond to an appositive participle in the Latin original, but to various other constructions (see Tables at end of Chapter III). (d) In these uses the appositive participle is common in the other Teutonic languages.

*B. Foreign (Latin).*

(3) In the uses named below, on the contrary, the appositive participle is not a native English construction, but is borrowed from the Latin :—

(a) The adjectival use of the present participle except in a few that have but little verbal force like *living* and *lying*.

(b) The modal use of the present and of the preterite participle when each denotes means.

(c) The temporal use of the participle except in a few slightly verbal present participles like *being*, *living*, and *sleeping*.

(d) The causal use of the present and of the preterite participle, though the latter may in part be an extension of the adjectival preterite participle.

(e) The final use of the participle, though this may in a slight degree be due to the frequent predicative use of the present participle after verbs of motion in Anglo-Saxon.

(f) The concessive use of the participle.

(g) The conditional use of the participle.

(h) The co-ordinate use of the participle.

(i) The present participle (whether adjectival, adverbial, or co-ordinate) when it governs an object in construction.

(4) The statements of (3) are believed to be substantiated by the following considerations: (a) The specified uses of the appositive participle are practically unknown in Early West Saxon; and, in the few instances in which they do occur, they are usually in direct translation of a Latin appositive participle. (b) In hundreds of instances Alfred expressly avoided the constructions, although they occurred on every page of his Latin originals. (c) These uses are very rare in the more original prose (the *Chronicle*, the *Laws*, and *Wulfstan*), and in almost every instance have been traced to a direct or indirect Latin prototype. (d) They are very rare, too, in Anglo-Saxon poetry, and are found almost exclusively in the poems known to rest on Latin originals. (e) They seldom occur in the other Germanic languages except in the more slavish translations. (f) They are very common, on the other hand, in the later and closer Anglo-Saxon translations (*Ælfric*, the *Gospels*, and *Benet*<sup>1</sup>).—The cogency of these arguments varies somewhat with respect to the several uses; concerning which see the detailed treatment in Chapter III.

(5) From the above statements ((1)–(4)) as to the different origin of the several uses of the appositive participle we draw

this general conclusion: Anglo-Saxon was favorable to the appositive participle with pronounced adjectival (descriptive) force, but was unfavorable to the appositive participle with strong verbal (assertive) force.

7. Originally in Anglo-Saxon, the present appositive participle did not have the power of governing a direct object in construction. All present participles with a direct object are due to Latin influence.

8. Nor did the preterite appositive participle have the power of governing an accusative of the direct object. Only one example occurs in the whole of Anglo-Saxon literature, and that is in imitation of the Latin original.

9. The Anglo-Saxon substitutes for the appositive participle were:—

- (1) Most frequently a co-ordinated finite verb.
- (2) Somewhat less frequently a subordinated finite verb.
- (3) Not infrequently a prepositional phrase.
- (4) Occasionally a verb in the infinitive mood, both inflected and uninflected.
- (5) Rarely an attributive participle.
- (6) In a few instances an absolute participle.
- (7) Occasionally an adverb.
- (8) Rarely an adjective.
- (9) Very rarely a substantive.

10. Although my treatment of the appositive participle in the other Germanic languages is professedly not exhaustive, it seems to make probable the following conclusions:—

- (1) The uses of the appositive participle in the other Teutonic languages are on the whole substantially the same as in Anglo-Saxon, but with considerable variation in the different languages and authors. Ulfilas and Tatian, for instance, are much more addicted to the appositive participle, especially that with verbal force, than are any of the Anglo-Saxon writers except the author of *Benet*<sup>1</sup>, which is a gloss.

(2) In the other Teutonic languages as in Anglo-Saxon the appositive participle is of two-fold origin. The adverbial participle denoting manner, the adjectival (relative) past participle, the adjectival present and the temporal participle in such verbs as *be*, *live*, and *sleep*, are perhaps native. In all other uses the appositive participle, whether present or past, is probably of Greek (Ulfilas) or Latin origin, though in one or two of these functions, as in Anglo-Saxon, the appositive participle may in part be an extension of the attributive or the predicative use of the participle. The present appositive participle with an object in construction seems to be of wholly foreign origin.

(3) The substitutes for the appositive participle are about the same in the other Germanic Languages as in Anglo-Saxon.

11. As for its stylistic effect, in Anglo-Saxon as in the classical languages the appositive participle conduces to rapidity, compactness, and flexibility. In the adjectival use of the preterite participle and in the adverbial use of the present and of the preterite denoting manner, this is more or less exemplified in all periods of Anglo-Saxon; and in the poetry the participle contributes, also, to picturesqueness. The other uses of the appositive participle were practically ignored by the Early West Saxons, and to this fact are largely due the unwieldiness and the monotony of Alfred's style. Ælfric and the translators of the *Gospels*, on the other hand, adopted these uses from the Latin, and handled the same almost as skillfully as do modern Englishmen; whence results in great measure the excellence of Ælfric's style in point of flexibility and grace. But these innovations were looked upon coldly by Ælfric's immediate successors (Wulfstan and the author of the *Peterborough Chronicle*), and scarcely became thoroughly naturalized during the Anglo-Saxon period.

MORGAN CALLAWAY, JR.

## ADDITIONS AND CORRECTIONS.

Originally not intending to discuss the inflection of the appositive participle, I did not in my first draft jot down all the peculiar forms observed. After deciding to treat the subject, I thought that the Introduction could be held in type until the final proving and printing of the Statistics. But, as their bulk made this impossible, the following additions and corrections are called for in the section of the Introduction (IV) dealing with the inflection of the appositive participle:—

## THE PRESENT PARTICIPLE.

NS. (p. 150):—L. 7 from below: change *three* to *two*, and strike out *Ælfr. L. S. 282. 5*; for, after the preparation of the Statistics, I received vol. IV of Skeat's edition of this work, in the "Errata" of which he corrects *feohtend* to *feohtende*. This, of course, changes *feohtend* in my Statistics (p. 197, l. 27).

L. 3 from below: change *four* to *five*, and add *104. 16* after 95. 11.

L. 1 from below: to exceptions add *-ænde: Benet<sup>1</sup> 68. 1; -ynde: Mat.<sup>1</sup> 9. 29.*

ASM. (p. 151, l. 6):—*Ælfr. L. S. 78. 489* has *-ande*, which reduces the number of *-ende* by one.

N. and A. PMFN. (p. 151, l. 10): to the exceptions add: (1) masculine: *-ænde: Benet<sup>1</sup> 55. 4, Greg.<sup>1</sup> 123. 16: -onde: Bede<sup>1</sup> 72. 9, Bened. 9. 7; -ynde: Mat.<sup>1</sup> 9. 27, 31; (2) neuter: -ande: *Ælfr. L. S. 224. 86.<sup>2</sup>**

## THE PRETERITE PARTICIPLE.

NSM. (p. 151, l. 16):—*Benet<sup>1</sup> 100. 3* has *beþæhð* for *beþæht*; and *Chron. 1048 E* has *unswican*.

DSMN. (p. 151, l. 22):—insert *-on* after *-an*.

ASM. (p. 151, l. 6 from below):—to the inflectional ending add *-um* for *-an*, weak (*Bede*<sup>1</sup> 130. 33), and see p. 153, where the example is quoted in full.

ASN. (p. 152, l. 1):—*Mat.*<sup>1</sup> 11. 7 has *-yd* instead of *-ed*.

NPM. (p. 152, l. 2):—*Laws* (Wihtr., c. 4) has *-yne* instead of *-ene*; and *Benet*<sup>1</sup> 113. 9 has *astrehð* for *astreht*.

NAPN. (p. 152, l. 7):—to the inflectional endings add *-u* (*Greg.*<sup>1</sup> 245. 8<sup>a</sup> & <sup>b</sup>), in which the participles are probably accusatives rather than nominatives (as given on p. 173, l. 10). *Beow.* 3049 has *ðurhetone* instead of *ðurhetene*.

GP. (p. 152, l. 10):—to the exception add *geferede*: *Elene* 992.

DPM. (p. 152, l. 11):—to the inflectional ending add *-e*: *Ælfr. Hept.* (Judges 16. 7).

On p. 203, ll. 8, 18, and 25, strike out *uncuð*.

The following typographical errors should be noted:—

P. 146, l. 26: change dash to hyphen.

P. 147, l. 2: for *rechfertigen* read *rechtfertigen*.

P. 149, l. 16: for *Indo-Germanie* read *Indo-Germanic*.

P. 180, l. 23: for *unbefohtenene* read *unbefohtene*.

P. 181, l. 11: for *ðinge* read *ðingc*.

P. 185, l. 26: for *geondead* = *angaritia*: 7. 54 read *geneadod* = 54. 7: *angariati*.

P. 288, l. 12: for *cwedende* read *cweðende*.

M. C., JR.

#### A NOTE OF THANKS.

I wish heartily to thank my colleagues in the School of English, Drs. Killis Campbell and Pierce Butler, and my honored teacher, Professor James W. Bright, for gracious help in the issuing of this monograph. Each of the three has kindly assisted in reading the proof, and has offered valuable suggestions for the betterment of my study.

M. C., JR.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY.

## I. TEXTS READ.

a. *Anglo-Saxon.*

*Ælf. de v. et n. Test.* = Grein, *Ælfric de vetere et novo Testamento, Pentateuch, Josua, Buch der Richter, u. Hiob*, vol. I of Grein's *Bibliothek der ags. Prosa*, Cassel, 1872.

*Ælf. Hept.* = *ib.*

*Ælf. Hom.* = Thorpe, *The Homilies of the A.-S. Church*, 2 vols., London, 1844, 1846.

*Ælf. L. S.* = Skeat, *Ælfric's Lives of Saints*, E. E. T. S., nos. 76, 82, 94, London, 1881, 1885, 1890. Vol. IV (1900) was received too late to be read for this study. Vols. I and II are cited simply by page and line; vol. III, by number of homily and of line.

*A.-S. Hom. and L. S.* = Assman, *Angelsächsische Homilien und Heiligenleben*, vol. III of Grein-Wülker's *Bibliothek der ags. Prosa*, Cassel, 1889. Subdivided into I = nos. 1-9, by Ælfric; and II = nos. 10-19, not by Ælfric.

*Bede*<sup>1</sup> = Miller, *The Old English Version of Bede's Ecclesiastical History*, E. E. T. S., nos. 95-96, 110-111, London, 1890-98.

*Benedict*<sup>1</sup> = A. Schröer, *Die ags. Prosabearbeitungen der Benediktinerregel*, vol. II of Grein-Wülker's *Bibliothek der ags. Prosa*, Cassel, 1885, 1888.

*Benet*<sup>1</sup> = H. Logeman, *The Rule of St. Benet, Latin and A.-S. Interlinear Version*, E. E. T. S., no. 90, London, 1888.

*Bl. Hom.* = Morris, *The Blickling Homilies of the Tenth Century*, E. E. T. S., nos. 58, 63, 73, London, 1874, 1876, 1880.

*Boeth.*<sup>1</sup> = Sedgfield, *King Alfred's Old English Version of Boethius De Consolatione Philosophiae*, Oxford, 1899. [For the prose only; the Metres are taken from Grein-Wülker's *Bibl. der ags. Poesie.*]

*Christ* = Albert S. Cook, *The Christ of Cynewulf*, Boston, 1900.

*Chron.* = Plummer-Earle, *Two of the Saxon Chronicles Parallel*, 2 vols., Oxford, 1892, 1900.

*Gosp.*<sup>1</sup> = Skeat, *The Gospels in A.-S. and Northumbrian Versions Synoptically Arranged*, 4 vols., Cambridge, 1871-1888.

*Greg.*<sup>1</sup> = Sweet, *King Alfred's W. S. Version of Gregory's Pastoral Care*, E. E. T. S., nos. 45, 50, London, 1871-2.

*Laus* = Liebermann, *Die Gesetze der Angelsachsen*, Halle, 1898-99.

*Oros.*<sup>1</sup> = Sweet, *King Alfred's Orosius (O. E. Text and Latin Original)*, E. E. T. S., no. 79, London, 1883.



*Poems* = Grein-Wülker's *Bibliothek der ags. Poesie*, 3 vols., Kassel, 1881-1898. [For all the poems except Cynewulf's *Christ*, which see above.]

*Ps. Th.*<sup>1</sup> = Thorpe, *Libri Psalmorum Versio antiqua Latina cum Paraphrasi Anglo-Saxonica*, Oxonii, 1835. [For the prose psalms only; the poetical ones are cited from Grein-Wülker.]

*Wulfst.* = A. S. Napier, *Wulfstan: Sammlung der ihm zugeschriebenen Homilien*, Berlin, 1883.

### b. Latin.

*Bede*<sup>2</sup> = Plummer, *Baedae Opera Historica*, 2 vols., Oxford, 1896.

*Benedict*<sup>3</sup> = *The Rule of Our Most Holy Father St. Benedict*, ed. with an English Translation and Explanatory Notes by A Monk of St. Benedict's Abbey, Fort Augustus, London, 1886 (?).

*Benet.*<sup>2</sup> = Latin in *Benet.*<sup>1</sup>

*Boeth.*<sup>2</sup> = Peiper, *Boetii Philosophiae Consolationis Libri Quinque*, Leipzig, 1871.

*Gosp.*<sup>2</sup> = Jager and Tischendorf, *Novum Testamentum, Graece et Latine*, Paris, 1861.

*Greg.*<sup>2</sup> = Bramley, *S. Gregory on the Pastoral Charge*, Oxford, 1874.

*Hept.*<sup>2</sup> = Latin *Heptateuch*, etc., given in *Ælf. Hept.*, which see.

*Oros.*<sup>2</sup> = Latin in *Oros.*<sup>1</sup>

*Ps. Th.*<sup>2</sup> = Latin in *Ps. Th.*<sup>1</sup> [The Introductions are taken from *Bruce* in II.]

## II. WORKS CITED.

Bartlett, Helen : *The Metrical Division of the Paris Psalter*, Baltimore, 1896.

Barz, Robert : *Das Participium im Iwein u. Nibelungenliede*, Riga, 1880.

Becker, K. F. : *Ausführliche deutsche Grammatik*, 2nd ed., Prag, 1870.

Behaghel, O. : *Die Syntax des Heliand*, Wien, 1897.

Bernhardy, G. : *Wissenschaftl. Syntax der Griechischen*, Berlin, 1827.

Bolling : "The Participle in Hesiod," in *Catholic Univ. Bulletin*, vol. III, Washington.

Brandt, H. C. G. : *German Grammar*, 4th ed., Boston, 1888.

Bright, J. W. : *The Gospel of St. Luke in Anglo-Saxon*, Oxford, 1893.

Bruce, J. D. : "The Paris Psalter," in *Publications of Modern Language Association*, IX, pp. 43-164, Baltimore, 1894.

Brühl, C. : *Die Flexion des Verbums in Ælfrics Heptateuch u. Buch Hiob* Marburg, 1892.

Brugmann, K. : "Die mit dem Suffix *-to-* gebildeten Partizipia," in *Indo-Germ. Forschungen*, v, 88-152, Strassburg, 1895.

Brugmann, K. : *Griechische Grammatik*, 3rd ed., München, 1900.

Callaway, M., Jr. : *The Absolute Participle in Anglo-Saxon*, Baltimore 1889.

- Classen, J. : *Beobachtungen über den homerischen Sprachgebrauch*, Frankfurt, 1867.
- Conradi, B. : *Darstellung der Syntax in Cynewulf's Juliana*, Halle, 1886.
- Cosijn, P. J. : *Altwestsächsische Grammatik*, Haag, 1888.
- Curtius, G. : *Griechische Schulgrammatik*, 9th ed., Prag, 1870.
- Curtius, G. : *Erläuterungen zu meiner Griechischen Schulgrammatik*, 3rd ed., Prag, 1875.
- Delbrück, B. : *Vergleichende Syntax der Indo-Germanischen Sprachen*, 3 vols., Strassburg, 1893-1900.
- Dewitz, A. : *Alfreds wests. Uebersetzung der Cura Pastoralis Gregors u. ihr Verhältnis zum Originale*, Bunzlau, 1889.
- Dietz, C. : *Die Lateinische Vorlage des Ahd. Tatian*, Leipzig, 1893.
- Douse, T. L. M. : *An Introduction to the Gothic of Ulfilas*, London, 1886.
- Draeger, A. : *Historische Syntax der Lateinische Sprache*, 2nd ed., Leipzig, 1878-1881.
- Einenkel, E. : *Streifzüge durch die Mittellengl. Syntax*, Münster, 1887.
- Einenkel, E. : "Syntax," in Kluge's "Gesch. der Engl. Sprache," Paul's *Grundriss der Germ. Philologie*, 2nd ed., Strassburg, 1899.
- Erdmann, A. : *The History of the Verbal Forms in -ing: Part I. Old Anglo-Saxon Period*, Stockholm, 1871.
- Erdmann, O. : *Untersuchungen über die Syntax der Sprache Otfrids*, Halle, 1874.
- Erdmann, O. : *Grundzüge der Deutschen Syntax*, I, Stuttgart, 1886 ; II, by Erdmann and Mensing, 1898.
- Falk, H., og Torp, A. : *Dansk-Norskens Syntax i Historisk Fremstilling*, Kristiana, 1900.
- Fay, E. W. : "Infinitas It," in *American Journal of Philology*, xx, pp. 149-168, Baltimore, 1899.
- Flamme, J. : *Syntax der Blickling Homilies*, Bonn, 1885.
- Förster, K. : *Der Gebrauch der Modi im Ahd. Tatian*, Einbeck, 1895.
- Förster, M. : *Ueber die Quellen von Ælfric's Homiliae Catholicae*, Berlin, 1892.
- Furkert, M. : *Der Syntakt. Gebrauch des Verbums in Guthlac*, Leipzig, 1889.
- Gabelentz and Löbe : *Ulfilas*, Bd. II. 2 : *Grammatik*, Leipzig, 1843-46.
- Gering, H. : "Ueber den Syntakt. Gebrauch der Participia im Gotischen," in *Zeitschrift f. d. Philologie*, v, 294 ff., Halle, 1874.
- Gildersleeve, B. L. : "On the Stylistic Effect of the Greek Participle," in *American Journal of Philology*, ix, 137 ff., Baltimore, 1888.
- Gildersleeve and Lodge : *Latin Grammar*, 3rd ed., New York, 1896.
- Gollancz, I. : *Cynewulf's Christ*, London, 1892.
- Gollancz, I. : *The Exeter Book ; An Anthology of A.-S. Poetry*, E. E. T. S., no. 104, London, 1895.
- Goodwin, W. W. : *Syntax of the Moods and Tenses of the Greek Verb*, rev. ed., Boston, 1890.

- Goodwin, W. W. : *Greek Grammar*, rev. ed., Boston, 1895.
- Grimm, J. : *Deutsche Grammatik*, ed. by Röhre u. Schröder, Gütersloh, 1897-98.
- Grimm, J. : *Andreas und Elene*, Cassel, 1840.
- Handke, R. : *Ueber das Verhältniss der Wests. Evangelienübersetzung zum Latein. Original*, Halle, 1896.
- Helm, F. : *Quaestiones Syntacticae de Participiorum Usu Tacitino Velleiano Sallustiano*, 1879.
- Hertel, B. : *Der Syntakt. Gebrauch des Verbums in dem ags. Crist*, Leipzig, 1891.
- Hicks : *Institutiones Grammaticae*, Oxoniae, 1689 ;—*Thesaurus Grammatico-Criticus*, Oxoniae, 1705.
- Hönncher, E. : "Quellen der ags. Genesis," in *Anglia*, VIII, 41-84, Halle, 1885.
- Höser, J. : *Die Syntakt. Erscheinungen in Be Domes Dæge*, Halle, 1889.
- Jolly, J. : "Zur Lehre vom Particip," in Curtius's *Sprachwissenschaftl. Abhandlungen*, Leipzig, 1874, pp. 71-94.
- Kellner, L. : *Zur Syntax des Engl. Verbums, mit besonderer Berücksichtigung Shakespears*, Wien, 1885.
- Kellner, L. : *Historical Outlines of English Syntax*, London, 1892.
- Kempf, E. : *Darstellung der Syntax in der sog. Caedmon'schen Exodus*, Halle, 1888.
- Kent, C. W. : *Elene*, Boston, 1889.
- Kinard, J. P. : *A Study of Wulfstan's Homilies: Their Style and Sources*, Baltimore, 1897.
- Koch, C. F. : *Hist. Grammatik der Engl. Sprache*, 2nd ed., 3 vols., Cassel, 1878-1891.
- Koeberlin, A. : "De Participiorum Usu Liviano," etc., in *Acta Sem. Phil. Erlang.*, v, 65-120, 1891.
- Köhler, K. : *Der Syntakt. Gebr. des Infinitivs u. Particips im Beowulf*, Münster, 1886.
- Krüger, K. W. : *Griechische Sprachlehre*, 5th ed., Berlin, 1873.
- Kühn, P. T. : *Die Syntax des Verbums in Ælfries Heiligenleben*, Leipzig, 1889.
- Lücke, O. : *Absolute Participia im Gotischen u. ihr Verhältn. zum Gr. Original*, Magdeburg, 1876.
- Lund, G. F. V. : *Oldnordisk Ordffjningslære*, København, 1862.
- Lye, E. : "Grammatica Anglo-Saxonica," in Junius's *Etymologicum Anglicanum*, Londini, 1753.
- Madvig, I. N. : *Lateinische Sprachlehre für Schule*, 1857.
- Mätzner, E. : *Englische Grammatik*, 3 vols., 3rd Aufl., Berlin, 1880-1885.
- Manning, O. : "Grammatica," in Lye's *Dictionarium Saxonica et Gothico-Latinum*, Londini, 1772.
- March, F. A. : *A Comparative Grammar of the Anglo-Saxon Language*, New York, 1873.

Milroy, W. M. : *The Participle in the Vulgate New Testament*, Baltimore, 1892.

Mohrbutter, A. : *Darstellung der Syntax in den vier echten Predigten des ags. Wulfstan*, Lübeck, 1885.

Mourek, V. E. : *Weitere Beiträge zur Syntax des Ahd. Tatian*, Prag, 1894.

Müller, A. : *Die Syntakt. Gebr. des Verbums in d. ags. Judith*, Leipzig, 1892.

Müller, H. : *Ueber die ags. Versus Gnomai*, Jena, 1893.

Müller, T. : *Angelsächsische Grammatik*, Göttingen, 1883.

Nygaard, M. : "Den Lærde Stil i den Norrøne Prosa," in *Sprogl. Hist. Studen* for 1895, pp. 153-170.

Ott, J. H. : *Ueber die Quellen der Heiligenleben in Ælfric's Lives of Saints*, I, Halle, 1892.

Owen, W. B. : "The Influence of the Latin Syntax on the A.-S. Gospels," in *Transactions of Am. Philol. As.*, 1882, pp. 59-64.

Paul, H. : *Mittelhochdeutsche Grammatik*, 4th ed., Halle, 1894.

Pessels, C. : *The Present and Past Periphrastic Tenses in Anglo-Saxon*, Strassburg, 1896.

Planer, J. : *Ueber den Syntakt. Gebr. des Verbums in d. ags. Phoenix*, Leipzig, 1892 (?).

Pratje, H. : "Syntax des Heliands, I. Das Verbum," in *Jahrbuch des Vereins f. Niederd. Spr.*, XI, 1-84, Leipzig, 1886.

Rannow, M. : *Der Satzbau des Ahd. Isidor im Verhältniss zur Latein. Vorlage*, Berlin, 1888.

Reussner, H. A. : *Untersuchungen über die Syntax in dem ags. Andreas*, Halle, 1889.

Schipper, J. : *Alfreds Uebersetzung von Bedas Kirchengeschichte*, vol. IV of Grein-Wülker's *Bibl. der ags. Prosa*, Leipzig, 1899.

Schmidt, A. : *Untersuchungen über Ælfred's Bedauübersetzung*, Berlin, 1889.

Schmidt, W. : *Abhandlung über die Engl. Verbalform auf -ing*, Königsberg, 1872.

Schrader, B. : *Studien zur Ælfrieschen Syntax*, Jena, 1887.

Schürmann, J. : *Darstellung der Syntax in Cynewulf's Elene*, Paderborn, 1884.

Schwerdtfeger, G. : *Das Schwache Verbum in Ælfries Homilien*, Marburg, 1893.

Seedorf, H. : *Ueber Syntakt. Mittel des Ausdrucks im Ahd. Isidor u. d. verwandten Stücken*, Paderborn, 1888.

Seiler, F. : "Die ahd. Uebersetzung der Benediktinerregel," in P. and B.'s *Beiträge*, vol. I, pp. 402-485, Halle, 1874.

Seyfarth, H. : *Der Syntakt. Gebr. des Verbums in d. ags. Genesis*, Leipzig, 1891.

Sievers, E. : *Ags. Grammatik*, 3rd ed., Halle, 1898.

Smith, J. : *Bedae Historia ecclesiastica a . . . Anglo-Saxonum rege Alfredo Saxonice reddita*, Cambridge, 1722.

- Sohrauer, M. : *Kleine Beiträge zur altenglischen Grammatik*, Berlin, 1886.
- Spaeth, J. D. : *Die Syntax des Verbums in d. ags. Gedicht Daniel*, Leipzig, 1893.
- Storch, T. : *Angelsächsische Nominalcomposita*, Strassburg, 1886.
- Strong, Logeman, and Wheeler : *Introduction to the Study of the History of Language*, London, 1891.
- Sweet, H. : *A New English Grammar*, 2 vols., Oxford, 1892, 1898.
- Tammelin, E. J. : *De Participiis Priscæ Latinitatis Quæstiones Syntacticae*, Helsingfors, 1889.
- Thomas, C. : *A Practical German Grammar*, New York, 1895 (?).
- Torp : see Falk.
- Vernaleken, T. : *Deutsche Syntax*, 2 vols., Wien, 1861, 1863.
- Von Jageman, H. C. G. : *Elements of German Syntax*, New York, 1892.
- Wack, G. : *Ueber das Verhältniß von König Ælfreds Uebersetzung der Cura Pastoralis zum Original*, Colberg, 1889.
- Whitney, W. D. : *A Compendious German Grammar*, 5th ed., no date.
- Wichmann, J. : *Ælfred's ags. Uebertragung der Psalmen I-LI*, Halle, 1888. [*Anglia*, XI, 37-96.]
- Wohlfahrt, T. : *Die Syntax des Verbums in Ælfrie's Uebersetzung des Heptateuch u. des Buches Hiob*, München, 1885.
- Wülfing, J. E. : *Die Syntax in den Werken Alfreds des Grossen*, 2 pts., Bonn, 1894-1901.
- Wunderlich, H. : *Beiträge zur Syntax des Notker'schen Boethius*, Berlin, 1883 (?).

M. C., JR.